

THE PLAN OF GOD

The conflict between nations as seen in the Bible

Presentation:

Zaderk is a computer expert fond of Bible prophecies. One fine day in September he's in Rome working on a new computer network for a company located in the south part of town. He goes out for lunch with his clients and then, after finishing his work, finds himself alone in his car thinking about his friend and former colleague Simon who now lives in the States....

Everything mentioned in this book is somehow linked by the prophecies of the Bible. Prophecies represent 30% of the Bible itself and are the means God uses to predict our future. The number of prophecies regarding the second coming of Jesus Christ is eight times more than that regarding the first coming of Jesus.

This novel compares the prophecies that are still to become true with the world's current situation, i.e. world religion, satellites, world finance, single currency, globalisation, world police, population control, EU, ethnic wars, Israel and the middle east. All these things are necessary for the making of the world government at the "end of time", as mentioned in the Bible.

Names are invented, some episodes are true, every theological argument is based upon the Bible text.

The making of this book was costly in terms of time in Bible research and money for the translation, but if even only one person will understand the Plan of God, and will come to know Jesus Christ as a personal Saviour, thank to this testimony, then it has been worthy writing it.

Giulio Credazzi Viale Tirreno, 231 - 00141 Rome – Italy –

You can contact him by Email at the address giulio@credazzi.com -

Please register Yourselves at the Web address: <http://www.PlanofGod.net> You will receive information about the new Books about the "end-times" by Giulio Credazzi, You will not be solicited to pay anything, the principle used for distribution is similar to the "Shareware" concept, by registering You will give the Author a signal about how many people read the book.

The Author is the owner of a Computer Shop in Rome Italy, but, he would like one day to serve the Lord full time, to do this he would like to use his skill and talent in writing. This book is here to be downloaded for free, please evaluate his capacity and if you are in a position to find an Editor, please do it. In this last case contact [the Author](#).

If You find this book a good book, useful, that gives glory to our Lord Jesus, tell other people, place a link from Your homepage, tell other brothers and sisters in Christ in Your Local Church.



You can also download the Book The Silent Friend from www.redwood.it/silent

THE PLAN OF GOD

The great use of the Bible is to convince the reader directly through the Bible itself and not through the author's interpretation.

As a Christian it is fundamental to say that though one must be both dogmatic and inflexible on doctrines such as the birth of Christ from the virgin Mary, Jesus Christ as a divinity, the Bible's infallibility, the need of being born again, salvation per grace through faith as well as other doctrines as the return of Jesus Christ, this does not mean that one should be dogmatic on when Jesus will return. Those who disagree on the sequence foreseen by this book are to be respected. The opinion for which the future prophetic outline has already been established, especially for what concerns the Rapture of the Church, is known as "pre-tribulation"; in other words, it is thought that Jesus Christ will return to snatch the Church before tribulation begins. This doesn't mean the author has less consideration of those brothers who do not agree with this view.

The aim of this book is to reinforce the Christian faith in all brothers and to reveal the often forgotten, suffocated and neglected message contained in the Bible for those who do not have real faith in Jesus. The plan of God is clear and straightforward though it cannot be seen superficially. God wants the relationship towards man and woman to be serious, personal, intimate and reciprocal, based on truth.

The parts of the Bible contained in the book are based on the following principles:

- When the simple meaning of the Scriptures makes sense, do not seek for other meanings; just take each word for its literal meaning unless the facts described in the context should have a different indication.
- The Bible is the word of God
- The signs that the God of the Bible is supernatural are:
 - The creation. From disorder there cannot be order; it is scientifically illogical.
 - The coming of Jesus on earth, his death and resurrection to save mankind
 - The Bible. 30% of its contents are prophetic; over 100 prophecies on the first coming of Christ have become true. The Bible is the only book that establishes its authority by revealing the future. The number of prophecies on the second coming of Christ are at least eight times more than those concerning his first coming.
 - Israel's existence is the thread of the Bible's prophecies. If you study Israel's history you will find confirmation of the Bible. Israel's survival is the living evidence of what is contained in the Bible.

Index

	Page
Introduction	4
1. A day as many others	6
2. Prophets and Prophecies	9
3. The turning point	11
4. The plan of God	16
5. Leaves and Seasons	23
6. The Bible's view	27
7. The view	30
8. The human adventure begins	32
9. High technology	34
10. The Christian evidence	41
11. The Leader	44
12. The role given to the Bible	48
13. The appointment	49
14. The sequence of the events	52
15. The scar will always be there	59
16. The Nebuchadnezzar's Statue dream	66
17. The truth	69
18. Greeks, Medes and Persians, Rome, The world's government, The reign of Christ	70
19. The last goodbye	73
20. 70 weeks corresponding to 490 years	77
21. The explanation	79
22. Matthew 24, Jesus replies to his disciples the moment of the end	88
23. Final considerations	92
24. The summarised chronological scheme of the 7 years of tribulation	95
25. The soundtrack	114

.... *And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free* (John 8:32)

INTRODUCTION

The history of mankind is filled with conflicts and wars throughout the centuries. The moments of peace were influenced by seasons but every region in turns, especially the richest ones, were at war. Basically, all mankind has based its life through the centuries on war; at first, it prepared itself for war, then it made war, then it recovered from the war and then got ready for yet another war.

One of the aspects that limited conflicts was logistics. Up to the twentieth century, for a war it was necessary to go onto purposely made battlefields, line up against each other and then fight. A great amount of energy was spent simply to go to war plus there were also sieges. War required time and did not involve all civilians.

Starting from the twentieth century, the characteristics of war became, terror, bombing of civilians, retaliation, cross-revenges, coward and infamous attacks. This explosion of violence reached its peak during the two world wars and coincided with the development of communication systems and the increased speed in transportation. Therefore, the more means are available, the more conflicts there will be. The obvious consequence is that mankind cannot do without war. There is something inside mankind, an internal feeling that makes us search for an enemy, someone to fight against, our need to establish ourselves flows through the hatred for anything that can be an obstacle.

Indeed, during the twentieth century, conflicts have increased at all levels; there are media wars – i.e. through media – psychological wars, ethnic wars, conventional wars between nations, financial, economic and commercial wars.

Also internal and individual wars have increased. Drugs, anorexia, sexual violence, violence in sport stadiums are all consequences of the explosion of internal wars that are then poured on ourselves or others.

Crisis at all levels are always more and stronger. There is a degenerating development in past behaviours leading us to a more uncertain future – at least for those who are not wise enough to know the future of Nations. This statement on the future should not be made superficially. It is very difficult to talk about the future with certainty; there is no possible scientific nor rational basis. But, if we base ourselves on the message contained in the Bible and analyse all that has been written in the past regarding the future and we compare it with history, a careful and detailed analysis of facts will prove that God exists and that he has revealed the future of mankind.

Going back to the analysis of human conflicts, we can say that each conflict is an instrument through which one part of the human population defends itself against another or conquers something that another part does not want to give or wants to take away from them. In the present civilization, ego and personality cult are brought to the extreme, conflicts are being extended to each aspect of every day life, the media bring into our houses stories of violence and death that before the twentieth century were present only in history books and available for those able to read. Nowadays, due to the reality of images as well as to fiction in shows, blood spurting out from a vein doesn't impress us any longer; there are videogames that train our brain to use violence and, at extreme points, can make some people confuse the game with reality. All these conflicts are present among members of the same family, party, football team, fellow citizens, drivers, public offices and shops.

Intolerance continues to increase, good manners and respect towards others are no longer valid barriers for stopping the war instinct that is inside everyone; also religion has lost its meaning, there is no longer fear in God, religion is now a weak stopgap that crumbles into bits if in contrast with personal interests.

This situation seems unexplainable, incontrollable, impossible to handle but actually our present historical frame is in line with what is described and explained in the Bible.

Under a human point of view the situation is difficult and exhausting but the spiritual and practical information contained in the Bible can make us understand what is happening and why. The most important thing is that in the Bible we can understand where we are, where we come from and where we are going.

Mankind is inserted in a context that is much bigger though necessary to ensure "The plan of God" is achieved. It is a necessary war for conquering something that is not possible to obtain peacefully because there is an "enemy" that wants the opposite. The struggle for obtaining divine objectives is hard, long, exhausting, with no holds barred from our "enemy" as God's point of view, His justice, stops Him from following a path that is not perfectly in line with His law. On the other hand there is an "enemy" that knows God's laws well and has no scruples in using or infringing them to his advantage. This fight is made of attacks, retreats, assaults, defeats and patient waiting up to the final conflict, a seven-year war called "Tribulation" that will reach its peak with the battle of Armageddon. Once this is over there will be real peace.

This book explains carefully and in detail every aspect of mankind's global conflict through the centuries, it offers real hope and gives absolute knowledge of the facts to the reader.

There is not much time left for proselytism, to convince people to follow a certain religion, and to go to church. We are not talking about hidden or unknown facts; if these are hidden and unknown it is only because mankind is not used to reading the Bible and believing in its contents.

Our target is to supply tools to those who cannot stand the present situation of our society, who would like to know the circumstances which they are living in and would like an answer that makes sense to the questions raised by the wars among nations and our internal conflicts.

This book is presumptuous. It wants to give a clear, firm and strong answer not based on human knowledge but on Christian faith. Let's not forget that for a real Christian, Jesus is God's incarnation and the Bible is God's word.

A DAY LIKE MANY OTHERS

Rome, September 2001: A fine day. The sun is shining ,there's no traffic on the roads to get to EUR (an area of Rome), Zaderk has an appointment with a client he has to do some cabling for a computer network. It's hot again following the cool period , the end-of-August storms. Summer had looked like it was over, all that wind, clouds and rain. But now the Roman sky is clear, blue in that typical Roman way, different from any other city in the world. He did not have time to take the dogs out, he'll do when he gets back. The puppy was out in the garden whereas Norton – the bigger one – could manage without problems and so was indoors.

12 o'clock: he parks his Volvo Station wagon so as not to inconvenience the Ford garage, positioning it in a manner that he can easily take out his tools, monitoring instruments and wires.

A swift greeting – they're all very busy – Zaderk starts putting in the first wires and prepares everything for others to pass. Lunch time: he sets off with his clients.

The air is warm, the atmosphere is good. They all calmly take a seat at the bar's table and order: one takes a salad, another a roll, some order cokes, others have water. It's nearly two p.m., schools haven't started yet, many Romans are still on holiday making the most of the good weather for the last few days of holidays left; there is practically no traffic and Via Laurentina, one of the most important main roads of the city is empty; you can actually hear the birds in the trees singing. Lunchtime goes by pleasantly, a joke and a view on assorted topics: the latest car models, diets, New Economy, Globalisation and new opportunities for developing the new technology market regardless of the stock market crises and reduction of consumer goods. Every one evaluates, plans and gives his own outlook depending on his personal dreams and ambitions, and endeavours to develop his own personal, family and work condition. Even during his lunch Zaderk doesn't stop giving his technical or commercial explanations on how to upgrade a computer or open a specific web site. No religious topics are mentioned today. These are Zaderk's fixation, especially those concerning the prophetic aspect of the Christian religion. Lunch with Fabio, Roberto and their employee progresses peacefully and the icing on the cake is the espresso coffee and the chance to have five or six different tastes by using different types of sugar or even honey. Rome seems at a standstill as if recovering from the summer holidays, nobody wants to quarrel, to get back into the hectic hustle of their jobs, everything however goes on calmly and relaxed. The equivalent is for most of the western world. The weather forecast says warm and good weather everywhere from Northern Europe to the United States. The sun is shining ; it gives you a positive and constructive feeling. The group walks back to the office at the same time as on the other side of the Atlantic fathers are saying goodbye to their children before going to work. For many this will be an important Tuesday; meetings with clients that could change one's life – the amount of money there is around the USA is unquestionably more than what we have in Italy; technology here is at least 5 years behind and it's more a matter of resources than of mentality. Zaderk had always wanted to see New York ever since he was very young; he spent five years in London working in a bank but without managing to see the Big Apple; he even bought a domain: "NewYorkInLinea.com" (New York on line. Com) so he could develop some business with Italian people living there but had not been able to set it up and develop it yet. The home page was a wonderful air photo of the World Trade Centre twin towers hovering high over New York City.

His mind often went back to the past; he recalled the frenzy hours in the City of London, a metropolis very similar to New York under a working point of view with people of every class and nationality going to work and continuously about the things to do, the calls to make, e-mails then lunch, a lift to the bank, a sandwich and a beer, meeting some colleagues, perhaps meeting the head of some rival company to weigh up an offer for a better job, what recently happened to his dear friend Simon who managed to get into Morgan Stanley of London and then get transferred to New York where his career now as a dealer is doing great. They're now coming out from the underground which is packed every moment with people just like an ants nest at the peak of its

activity; everyone is going their own way, regardless of what the guy next to them looks like; everybody's target is to get to work on time; everyone's mind is concentrated on the sequences that will take him/her to his/her final destination, right turn, straight up to the American Express building, then left and straight behind "the tower", an engineering masterpiece, 420 meters high, 110 floors, 104 lifts per tower, 43,000 55 cm windows. Every day more than 50,000 people go in there to work, not to mention the tourists from all over the world that come to see the view and pay homage to the most modern city in the world. Zaderk's colleague went back there on September 2nd to develop their internet project; Zaderk listened to him talking about his trip to the twin towers with envy. Today is September 11th, a day like many others. It is 2.15 p.m. and Zaderk's greatest problem is how to make the 8 pole screened cables get to the hub that will then send the signal to the nine computers of the network. He must hurry; he still has to take the dogs out, cross the city to get back home and then get to the shop on time where he has to be present due to lack of staff. His job is always on the run, working on the turnover to cover expenses, always trying to improve his technical knowledge to satisfy customer needs. Time flies, during the day at work, studying at night, not much time for his family, his dearest and elder relatives who will be gone from this world soon.

He remembers when he used to work in London for Creditanstalt Bankverein, he would have given up everything to go and work with Simon for Morgan Stanley in New York in the offices located in the south tower of the World Trade Centre with the same view witnessed in many American movies, where the financial world pulses stronger and capability and personal skills can get you the best results and satisfaction.

8.44 a.m. New York time – business as usual; the same goes for Rome where it is 2.44 p.m.. It's hot, Zaderk is covered in sweat, his t-shirt is soaked and he smells of sweat; this means he will be even later since he needs to shower. Time flies, it is now 3.45 p.m., the first part of the wiring is done, all connections have been made, the wires have all been tested, as well as the most difficult one – the one that had to pass along the 6-meter-high ceiling of the workshop- has been put in. Next time, the existing network using a coaxial cable can be replaced with a much faster 100 megabit network.

Traffic on the bypass and the fraction of the Rome-L'Aquila motorway that enters city flows quite rapidly; Zaderk is listening to his favourite CD: in his car, "The Dark Side of the Moon" by Pink Floyd – His favourite song is Time.

TIME

*Ticking away the moments that make up a dull day
You fritter and waste the hours in an off hand way
Kicking around on a piece of ground in your home town
Waiting for someone or something to show you the way*

*Tired of lying in the sunshine staying home to watch the rain
You are young and life is long and there is time to kill today
And then one day you find ten years have got behind you
No one told you when to run, you missed the starting gun*

*And you run and you run to catch up with the sun but it's sinking
And racing around to come up behind you again
The sun is the same in a relative way, but you're older
Shorter of breath and one day closer to death*

*Every year is getting shorter, never seem to find the time
Plans that either come to naught or half a page of scribbled lines*

*Hanging on in quiet desperation is the English way
The time is gone the song is over, thought I'd something more to say*

(Pink Floyd © 1973 - The Dark Side of the Moon)

4.05 p.m., home, a quick wash, change of t-shirt, radio walkman, lead, garage keys, a routine carried out hundreds of times every year, a walk in the park enjoying the sun shine in the blue sky, the dogs are free and walk around sniffing everywhere and marking their "territory". He's tired, has nothing to read, he usually has the Bible or a book with him; actually, he normally reads more than one book at a time, some concern technical aspects of the Internet Server or problems on computer network protocols, others talk about Bible prophecies or about Hebraism – if you want to understand Bible prophecies you need to know Israel's history very well.

The radio is on. In recent times, the situation in the Middle East has been quite critical; Struggles between Israelis and Palestinians are sometimes just little conflicts, other times they are really dreadful – Islamic fanatics blowing themselves up who believe they will reach martyrdom by filling themselves with explosives and then blowing themselves up in the middle of a group of innocent people, no forewarning, not considering if there are any children, just one idea in mind: kill as many people as possible. Nowadays the only news we hear is bad: the ozone layer, pollution, conflicts between former friendly countries with "ethnic wipe-outs", burglars breaking and entering into Italian villas and who do not hesitate to kill or terrorise the owners, children killing their parents, hurricanes, floods, earthquakes and famines... the entire world seems to be heading towards a road with no return; we're on course to self-wounding and self-destruction, all this because we do not know: *"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children. As they were increased, so they sinned against me: therefore will I change their glory into shame."*(Osea 4:6-7).

The radio is Zaderk's most used instrument to examine the news more profoundly coming from society today, a very complicated system with rules and feedback sometimes unexpected although he has learnt to recognize and understand this system by studying the Bible as a whole especially absorbing the mechanisms behind the prophecies made many centuries before Christ, which took place following a pattern similar to a scientific trial demonstrating a specific theory.

The study of Bible prophecies covers all history of mankind from creation to the end of this time, the time in which the reign of Israel will be the hero. All prophecies that were made have some human and historical proof and are all correlated to Israel.

PROPHETS AND PROPHECIES

Prophecies stand for 30% of the Bible. The Old Testament contains more than 100 prophecies on the coming on the earth of the Messiah. The prophecies regarding his return to establish His Reign are more than 200. If we believe that Jesus really came, we must also believe in the same way that he will come back. On the whole, the second coming of Jesus is mentioned 8 times more than his first coming.

It is estimated that a prophecy has one out of two chances to happen. If we take 50 prophecies, the chances are 1 in 1,125,000, 000, 000, 000, 000, i.e. 2 elevated 50. If we take into consideration 330 prophecies, the chances are 1 in 2.187×10^{99} and bearing in mind that the universe as we know it has a range of 5 million light years and contains 10^{80} electrons, we have a possible comparison on how the Bible's prophecies acquire importance in every day life.

The dictionary states:

A Prophet is he who speaks in the name of God and, more explicitly, he who reveals the future inspired by Him.

A Prophecy is the contents of the prophet's revelation; the prediction of the future events due to divine inspiration. In a wider sense, every prediction, either true or false, comes from either personal intuition or various elements such as dreams, astral observations etc..

On this matter, the Bible states:

"If there shall arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and give thee a sign or a wonder, And the sign or the wonder shall come to pass, of which he spoke to thee, saying, Let us go after other gods, which thou hast not known, and let us serve them; Thou shalt not hearken to the words of that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams: for the LORD your God testeth you, to know whether ye love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul."(Deut. 13:1-3)

"There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, Or a charmer, or a consulter with mediums, or a wizard, or one who calls up the dead. For all that do these things are an abomination to the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee. Thou shalt be perfect with the LORD thy God. For these nations, which thou shalt possess, hearkened to observers of times, and to diviners: but as for thee, the LORD thy God hath not permitted thee so to do. The LORD thy God will raise up to thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like me; to him ye shall hearken!" (Deut. 18:10-15)

In a realistic, lay and confused world such as this one, it is old-fashioned to speak about prophecies. The life of a Christian is very hard as it is difficult to discuss with "cultured" atheist or agnostics always ready to mock and with no intentions of taking into consideration the possibility that a prophecy could be true. This is why tepidness and rituals are the most widespread characteristics of the Christian world regardless of the denomination we take into account.

The world is willing to accept any theory or philosophy at a superficial level but only born again Christians accept the Bible and, therefore, all its prophecies as completely true.

This book requires that the reader analyse in detail all its content and convey an opinion only after having read it carefully and giving a possibility that the message is true.

The author does not think he has had a special revelation from God or is some special reporter with who knows what divine task. He is a Christian who wanted to study further in detail the prophetic aspect of the Bible selecting prophecies from both the Old and the New Testament, putting them in order of time, comparing the prophecies that came about with historic events whilst giving emphasis to the prophecies yet to happen and analysing them under a modern light whenever there are signs announcing the happening of prophecies illustrated by the prophets in the Bible or by our Lord Jesus.

It is quite logical to believe that if there is a God, a Creator of all things, we should be able to contact Him in some way. It is illogical that he has disappeared. It is also possible that the inventor of DNA has planned, or at least profiled, something that is, to say the least, structured for this world full of discrepancies and in need of justice.

Examining the Bible we discover that this God is not hiding; on the contrary, we can see and feel Him but we must tune into His frequency which is a spiritual and not material one. And at this point, ceremonies, spectacular healings, apparitions, Dervishes, Spiritual Leaders with inconceivable powers do not make sense anymore. Actually, anyone of us, anywhere and in any moment can establish a relationship with our Creator as long as we follow some little rules He has created due to the current spiritual situation of the earth.

THE TURNING POINT

4.10 p.m., Zaderk knows the news has finished but Radio 1 is broadcasting something that seems like a news bulletin. The journalist is talking about a plane that crashed against a skyscraper. Zaderk cannot understand whether it is the news or a radio drama. He cannot understand the information caught through his earphone; it all seems so absurd as if his brain refuses to take it in. He is not able to codify the information and insert it in any place among his thoughts, to associate it to something already seen either in real life or in fiction. He just stores everything and keeps it in a limbo. The words seem very dramatic; Zaderk cannot understand if they are talking about an accident or an attack. His mind is surprised; suddenly, the silence in the park, the sun shining from above, the silence has no effect on him; his brain starts analysing and codifying all this information heard on the radio, trying to put it in order and rebuild its sequence. His mind cannot imagine or rebuild the image. A plane has crashed into one of the twin towers, then another into the other tower and another plane into the Pentagon. His thoughts run to Simon with whom he worked shoulder to shoulder when he was in London but the news keeps on coming; there is another plane that has apparently been high-jacked. A shiver runs down his spine; he realises that something very serious is happening in the United States, something beyond his comprehension. Zaderk feels the need to go back home, turn on his TV and switch to CNN that is a source of information in real time. He cannot believe his eyes. The twin towers are on fire; CNN and all Italian TV channels are showing the scene continuously as if time had stopped, getting to the shop late doesn't matter anymore. He phones the shop, they've also been informed. The scene is both tragic and spectacular; you can see people crying for help from the towers smoky windows, some throw themselves out; they look like old rags but they are people. His mind races trying to understand who is responsible for all this, who is the enemy, who should be struck by revenge so that he can be stopped but it is a well organised plan; the stone has been thrown, the hand soon tucked away, typical of terrorism.

But if God exists how can such a thing make any sense? Everyone is asking himself how can God allow such things? But does God really exist? Is there a logic in these episodes happening on the planet as foreseen by the message written in the Bible?

They're talking about thousands of deaths of every nationality and social class. It's a catastrophe. The towers collapse rapidly swallowing hundreds of rescuers and thousands of people trying to run away; a thick and heavy smoke rises up in the air. Someone wanted to cause the death of thousands of people, leaving thousands of orphans and widows, taking away children from their mothers, wives from their husbands and husbands from their wives. Life is so short, full of dangers and problems; How can it be that someone wants to make it even shorter? What is even worse is all this has happened in the name of God. But one thing's certain: it is not the God of the Bible. He came to die in the place of Mankind; He did not preach people to die in order to reach Paradise. Heaven cannot be earned; you go there due to the choices you made before Christ.

Zaderk feels the need to speak to Simon, to know whether he was still in the towers during the attack. He falls into a deep and cold sadness; his mind recalls memories a state of confusion without following a chronological order. Minutes of silence accompany Zaderk's thoughts. A half smile on his face at the thought of how much Simon could laugh every time he recalled the "French fries" story when Simon witnessed Zaderk rushing in a McDonald's in Earl's Court in London and asking in his practically inexistent English for a "Big Mac and French fries", pronouncing the word "fries" with his heavy Italian accent. As often in the Anglo-Saxon world, an incorrect pronunciation of the product's name caused a lack of understanding by the assistant with very little fantasy. At this point, a duet began before an amused Simon. Zaderk said loudly: "French fris!" and the waitress: "what?" for about ten times until Zaderk looked up on the menu and indicating it said in an exasperated Roman Italian: "C'hai quattro cose scritte su quer menu, una comincia pè French, secondo te che vojo?" (You've got 4 things on that menu and only one begins with French. Guess what one I want?). The behaviour surprised the waitress and interrupted the duet. At that point she

said: “French Fries” with a perfect pronunciation eventhough she was from the Middle East. Zaderk exhausted replied in Italian: “ now you got it! Ok yes, this please”. The fact he had to use Italian to get himself understood was depressing; this meant his English was practically zero.

During evenings with friends Simon enjoyed telling the same old stories of Zaderk’s first days in London. The other favourite one was the “parrot” story. He used to tell it over and over again which used to make Zaderk feel embarrassed even if his English was now excellent. The parrot story took place at the house of a colleague of Zaderk’s uncle who used to work for Time Magazine and had invited him to his house in the countryside outside of London. At a certain point the guy left to go and get some wine and Zaderk found himself alone with the host’s wife, a sweet lady with a very tight accent, who was preparing the dinner. Zaderk was able to understand only about 20% of what the lady was saying. At first, he forced himself and kept on saying sorry every time he didn’t understand something, then, due to laziness, not wanting to look like a fool and, at the same time, to give a good impression, he gave up and made her believe he understood everythingl, he just nodded and smiled probably looking like a real idiot as he could hardly understand anything. However, the little he could get made him understand the basic topic. Zaderk was standing next to the kitchen’s glass door looking closely at the parrot in the cage when suddenly the lady charmingly and kindly handed him a leaf of salad she had just washed and said some words that sounded like a long series of “ps, fz, ps, fz, ps, fz”. He didn’t worry too much about the explanation, so with the same charm and kindness, thanked her, took the leaf and ate it.

Suddenly the sweet, very discreet and kind lady burst out laughing, tears coming from her eyes, almost throwing herself onto the floor, Zaderk realised he had shown all his ignorance and then had understood the salad was not for him but for the parrot.

Each time Simon told or heard the episode he was the first to burst out laughing up to a point where he couldn’t manage to speak for lack of air in his lungs.

Zaderk’s first job in London, as every good Italian, was as a waiter. The problem was his English was very poor so he couldn’t take orders, just serve and so he began working at the Savoy serving at banquets. He had sometimes worked as a waiter at his tennis club before leaving for his military service where he was a Parà (Italian Parachute troops) officer; in the morning he would lend a hand on the tennis courts – setting up the net and watering the courts – then he would go to the bar and serve dishes at lunch; the afternoon, he would work as a tennis master at the SAT school, In the evening, he would train – he was in the C and B teams of the club. Zaderk was quite a good tennis player but he didn’t have the “killer instinct”, so his results were good but never great. He was the club’s blue eyed boy. As he had lost his father very young, the owner of the club had a soft spot for him and didn’t make him pay any membership, found him some little jobs and, at the beginning, let him take few tennis lessons free of charge. Sport had kept Zaderk out of the pseudo-political troubles and violence of the 70s though he learnt some of the cunning ways of the time. He used to play together with Fabio; they would go to the same tournaments, and have their matches put at the same time but they were always late so to reduce travel times Zaderk would cross several red lights with his Vespa and Fabio would cover the number plate with his racket. The gang was crazy and bold. Some would pull up their bikes doing wheelies trying to touch the back of a bus with their front wheel. Once Zaderk went to the beach in Ostia (near Rome), his bike and was in line with five friends, all of them with a Vespa, three of them with the same number plate. However, while at the club Zaderk had never served any strangers in a formal manner holding the tray with one hand and serving the food with the other using two spoons. When he got the go ahead from the Savoy, he started training at home with little stones; he would put them on a plate and then, using two spoons, pass them onto another plate. Reality was much harder. Zaderk was responsible of one table; he had to serve at the right time, the same time of the other tables. He was always the last and at the end of the dinner at the moment of serving coffee his table always had the leftovers with the addition of some hot water, something absolutely disgusting. In Italy they would have thrown it in his face; fortunately, people never complained; the worse that could happen to him was they didn’t drink it.

One of the first tragic episodes to occur was while He was serving a group of Germans; due to his inexperience – he forgot to put his finger on the top of the coffee pot - the little amount of coffee left made the top fall on the clients cup and coffee went all over his client's evening jacket. The 20 apologies after were not enough to stop the client's anger who cursed him which for him was an incomprehensible language. The boss came, sent him quickly away and tried to settle the situation. Zaderk's experience at the Savoy lasted until he got another job in an Italian bank where Simon also used to work. One episode to remember: a British colleague of Zaderk kept on boasting about the British Empire, Italy's defeat in the world war II, the English power in the world and so on. Zaderk used to sit opposite this woman - who knew Italian well - in the room next to Simon's. One day, after yet another thought on the British Empire, Zaderk looked up bored and said in Italian: "if two-thousand years ago Julius Caesar had not come here, you'd still be walking on your hands and knees!" and then carried on working. The woman was shocked. She was not used to Roman straightforwardness and took it for bad manners. However, the words had two effects: at first the "Imperialist" stopped talking to him, then when she started talking to him again, she never mentioned how great the Empire was anymore. Sergio, the other room mate who came from the Elba island, burst out laughing. He had moved to London many years before and spoke English as if he was speaking the Livorno dialect. He'd stick "de" everywhere: "put in there de", "give me this please de" and was the master of reconciliations who taught the job to Simon first and then to Zaderk.

Now the towers were crumbling down, Zaderk and all the western world were shocked. These terrorists had nothing to do with any other one the world was used to.

Zaderk's high school days were during the so-called "Years of Lead", the period of the Red Brigades and fascist terrorism. But that was different. It was philosophical, almost snobbish, made by intellectuals, people who followed an almost predictable pattern. On the one hand, it was a family type of terrorism, one you could even sympathise with it if you were part of the unsatisfied and intolerant. On the other hand, it was a closed circle where hierarchy and personality cult had an important role, typical of Italian exhibitionism. It was deep-rooted into real politics, the students and workers organisations. Zaderk remembered when the Honourable Moro was kidnapped and at school people played the "toto-Moro" where you had to guess whether he was going or not to be killed. When he was found dead under the Christian-Democrats headquarters, a party was thrown and many celebrated. This kind of cynicism showed how events and times had emptied people's souls and made them lose life values. Nobody had thought that also Moro's police escort had been killed, children had become orphans, wives widows and mothers desperate. Who tried to had the others mocking him, was discredited, was called weak, a chicken. The slogan was "firing police do not scare us, we'll fight hard and fearless". Terrorism had become an every day thing, kidnappings were routine, you could feel it in the air – at least in Rome. One night Zaderk was on his Vespa and got stopped by Carabinieri. He almost got shot when he put his hand in the inside pocket of his jacket before their request for ID; he stopped just on time, raised his hands and put them on the roof of their car. There was a strong feeling of insecurity everywhere, political and students struggle often had their victims. Zaderk knew both the right wing environment – he used to be in a "fascist" group – and the left wing one – he used to go to a "communist" school in Tufello, in the suburb of Rome, he knew Cecchin well, a supporter of the right wing who lived in the Salaria area; he often gave him a lift home in the evening until one day a group of communist ambushed him and, threw him from the top of a stairway. Zaderk had often played football in the yard of the Archimede school with Valerio Verbano, a left wing supporter who was killed in his own house in front of his parents, another useless death. Zaderk was not involved in the attack in which Cecchetti was killed by pure chance, because that day he had to go and do the shopping and left the bar a little before the night in which a group of left wing extremists decided to take revenge for the firearm attack on Radio Onda Rossa, (a left wing radio) which had taken place a few days before and started shooting against Zaderk's group. Unfortunately, they mistook three boys sitting in front of their house for

young fascists and filled them up with lead. Two were seriously injured, one died instantly. While the commando was running away, they realised their mistake and started shooting against the group. However, at this point they were out of range, the surprise element was gone and no other else was injured. Those responsible are still to be found.

Many others died in that period. Some for politics, some for drugs. Roman teenagers of that time had grown up in an environment in which you were either communist or fascist, Red Brigades or New Order, Workers Front or National Front, Lotta Continua (Left wing group) or Linea (Right wing group), Via dei Volsci or Via Livorno (Streets of Rome). This kind of extremism gave one a feeling of security, you were forced to choose, one way or the other or else you were out; your position had to be clear, you had to clearly prove you were involved in illegal activities if you didn't want to be called a "zecca", "Peloso" (a flea, Hairy- insults for communist) or a "Fascist Pig". Drug addiction at that time was widespread, not like nowadays where alcoholism is more common. There was heroin, thefts were common events, the middle-upper class boys from places like Montesacro were well linked with those from Vigna Clara, Balduina and Parioli – the best residential areas of Rome – weapons were widespread. On the other side, the situation wasn't so different; red terrorism was well diffused in areas like San Lorenzo, San Basilio or Tufello where police car chases ended inside local side streets. Young people with different lifestyles, with a very strong emulation spirit rather than real ideals but all potential terrorists, bandits, thieves, burglars. It was all a question of fate, a meeting at the wrong time in the wrong place and you became a hooligan if not a killer like Zaderk's friend who killed "Serpico" a policeman of the Trieste area. The life of thousands of young people was running on a thin edge; you had to be tough, show no feelings and have an important role in the group as Zaderk's classmate Marcello who got killed in Milan in a robbery for financing a Red Brigade group. It was easy to find yourself on the books of some escaped convict, to know or have friends being investigated, arrested or killed. It was an easy, familiar, daily thing.

But now we're dealing with Islamic terrorists who don't follow fashions, they follow their "spirit"; we're not talking about young dissatisfied rich people or cultured philosophers, snobs indirectly influencing masses. We are before an enormous, ruthless phenomenon whose target is to destroy all the Christian world, the Jews and the Western society that, according to them, are the cause of all the evil, corruption and moral depravation of this world. As a matter of fact, September 11th has been devastating for Islam. The Western world now sees the Islam community as a bunch of terrorists; when they authorise the opening of an Islamic cultural centre, the first members to enrol are secret CIA, Digos or FBI agents. It is a fact that Islam is being more and more isolated by society, more controlled and kept aside by the Western economy; their integration has been compromised forever more unless all basic elements of Islamic integralism are given up and totally destroyed. From now on in the Western world anyone coming from an Islamic country will have to demonstrate he is not a terrorist even if he is a peaceful educated person it is a stigma they will carry for a long time; they have been branded by the Western world terrorised by the idea of losing what they have. For Muslims it will no longer be sufficient to have an Harvard degree, be cultured, well educated, well dressed and rich to be accepted by the western world. September 11th terrorists were all "good fellows", wealthy and educated up to that day.

If September 11th has, on the one hand, established the "social" end for Islam – with regards to the western world – social out casting will, on the other hand, increase and strengthen fanaticism therefore increase the risk of terrorism. Islamic terrorism is a network where the leader is a "spirit", i.e. a distorted interpretation of the Koran modifying one's behaviour which can even make one person, for personal or other reasons, base all his life on political-religious interests and make him decide to become a kamikaze in the centre of Paris though he has received no order nor indication from any of his leaders.

However, if we want to create a world religion, Islam has to lose its importance, has to give up some of its contents and level onto those positions in common with other religions. Something has got to happen so that the strength of fanaticism is destroyed by its own acts. The Islamic religion is not based on one's personal relationship with God at the same level though respecting each other's role; it is more a relationship between master and servant. Under a spiritual point of view Islam has no loving relationship between the creature and its Creator without any distinction; for Christians one has been saved because Jesus paid the price to save mankind not because he has carried out some propitiatory act. Muslim culture has no love because God is not there personally; the work of God is recognised by its fruits. But is there a God for those Christians who pretend, who do not have a real relationship with God? No, there isn't! Being of a certain religion does not imply one is with God. What someone believes is certified by God in the works He carries out, through His Spirit, through his believers: *"I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me."* (Gal 2:20).

THE PLAN OF GOD

How can we possibly say that The God in the Bible is the right one? How can we say the God of Israel is the real one? How can we say the Bible is the word of God?

It is neither easy nor common to say so but we must give it a chance.

Nowadays people believe in everything and nothing. Many theories are given to the existence of extraterrestrials, that God could be under the form of Buddha, Krishna, Allah or Christ; it is believed that Satan exists and doesn't exist; many believe in the stars, cards, Dervishes and healers, Nostradamus and other prophets; but it's all muddled up, confused, things are not studied deeply, all information is zipped, shocking, tangible, full of images and, if possible, full of emotions. The word of man continues to lose its value, stoned by the speed of events, by the often distorted tales of history. Economic interest is blinding our thoughts; relationships develop only depending on how much they can bring under an economic point of view or, however, for personal interests.

All this makes it very difficult to state something as the truth even when it is so. Only death can unveil the truth but then it will be too late as the dead will have not understood and caught it while they were alive.

Evangelisation's only purpose is to expose the simple message contained in the Gospel, emphasize that Christ is our Saviour, God alive who has granted us eternal life, who has defeated death for us.

Objections coming from people who call themselves Christians fall over believers as if someone said the Crusades were right, the death of the Maya, the Inquisition and Corruption in the Church is Jesus' fault.

Nobody thinks of the chance that the Bible may contain one real, unique and living message. The general opinion is that, yes it is a good book, narrates many lessons of life, maybe it is a bit old fashioned but still valid and correct. It is also a history book, a book of wisdom and formidable poetry; we all have a copy of it at home but nobody is used to reading it and when one does its contents are often not accepted; it is actually a bestseller but it is not the word of God.

But the Bible states it is the word of God; open it and see. To understand it though, we need to allow the Holy Ghost to let it get into our heads. But who, apart from the Bible and born again Christians, claims the Holy Ghost really exists? And above all, who is the Holy Ghost?

It is not at all easy to be a witness of Christ on earth but this is what being a good Christian is about.

It is not possible through science or philosophy to prove the God of the Bible is the real God and is basically made of two elements: Israel and the Prophecy. A careful analysis of these two elements enables one to select from the Bible the exact sequence of events regarding Israel from 700 BC to the Final Judgement and Eternity.

The analysis is neither immediate nor simple; many elements of the History of mankind and Prophecies have to be put together and compared without making the mistake of wanting to see mankind's present situation in the prophecies but studying the prophecies and trying to link them to historical events.

It is a big mistake to look for links between Prophecies and ordinary events in human history; it's like trying to see Saddam Hussein and the Gulf War, World War I & II, September 11th in the Bible. Prophecies are always related to Israel because the main part of the prophecies is contained in the book of Daniel who was a Jew, lived like a Jew and was worried about the future of his people and nation.

Therefore, the key to prove whether the God of the Bible is the right God is to introduce Him in this way: the God of the Bible said what He was going to do and when, in what sequence and why.

Who knows the Bible and believes it as the word of God, knows where he comes from, where he is going and why. God's revelation has two aspects, a "public" one and a personal, individual one; on the one hand it is addressed to the world's nations, on the *other* hand to each human being. Saint Paul explains this very well: "*That they should seek the Lord, if perhaps they might grope after him,*

and find him, though he is not far from every one of us: For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.” (Acts 17:27-28).

His revelation in both cases are on the dot and accurate. To distinguish the ideas of those who say: “so all those who are not Christians are doomed!” as if to say that the Gospel says so and is a fault of the Christian, we do not need to go too distant where nobody knows the Gospel, where in point of fact, as in certain Islamic countries, it is forbidden. In any case, in Italy where we are crammed by stories of Jesus and the Gospel since birth, it can be symptomatic that the amount of “so-called” Wizards is 30% more than that of Catholic priests. This means that in Italy we are becoming a highly hypocritical Christian country, quoted by Saint Paul to Timothy on the future: *“For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap up to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned to fables.”* (II Tim 4:3-4). God makes no distinction between people and nations. He proposes Himself to all; it’s up to us whether or not to believe.

The technique God uses to reveal Himself through the Prophecies of the Bible clearly. At first He describes what He wants to reveal entirely. Then he repeats the Prophecy and analyses more in detail its most important aspects that confirm and enable us to identify the prophetic meaning.

Through the Prophecy God reveals to mankind that among all the gods invented by mankind, He is the only real one as verified by the fact that He is the only one who can tell ahead of time what will happen to the entire world. The only problem for mankind is that we must go and read these prophecies, then verify them carefully and truthfully and we’re not used to this both in the western world or elsewhere. We’d rather carry on superficially, through hearsay, establishing personal opinions that are often just the most suitable ones for us. Until we reach a calamity maybe due to the death of a loved one, a financial problem or disillusionment; at this point we take the first theory with some logic that can fill up our lack of God. We just get it and make it ours.

In all this, the destruction of Israel becomes strategic under a Satanic point of view. Achieving this result has yet again a double value: first of all it denies the Bible as erasing Israel would invalidate the Plan of God described in the Bible as there would no longer be the human element proving the prophecies. The second aspect is a military one within the spiritual-human conflict of being on this planet. The physical elimination of Israel both as country and as a people before Armageddon would consent Satan to be the winner. The first judgement of Satan’s work is made during the last battle of our history that will be held in Megiddo (Israel) after its change to Christ on a mount facing an enormous plain and named Armageddon. This battle is described in Revelation 16:12-16 *“And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and its water was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared. And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of demons, working miracles, which go forth to the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.”*

So if Satan had been able to completely destroy Israel, he would have denied the Bible and would not have obstructed Israel in Megiddo where he would have lost: *“And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceedeth out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh”* (Rev 19:19-21).

Although God shows His identity to mankind through the Prophecies contained in the Bible, I still wish to make some scientific contemplations even though of low intensity are still significant.

The real history of Evolutionism

Once upon a time, long ago about 30 or 40 billion years ago - you know you need time for certain things. Three elements: Proton, Neutron and Electron, the basic elements of the universe, who knows where they came from! However, as I was saying, all that time ago they began rapidly multiplying. I knew that matter could not be created nor destroyed just transformed. Therefore I really can't explain where this new mass of electrons, protons and neutrons came from. Anyway, that must be its course if we are here now! All this mass of molecules that started forming in this way filled up to some extent the universe. They were all lifeless, none were able to decide to do anything special. However, from a great magnitude of mass we had the earth, from another, the sun, from another the moon, and from another the planets. Oh! By sheer circumstance the sun positioned itself at an exact distance so that electrons, protons and neutrons present on the earth would from lifeless become living. Oh yes, and then there was water! How was water made? Who knows, maybe by chance! We know that many nice things happen by chance! Anyway, the first mono-cellular beings began to develop, great! "We're alive" they said (virtually). We were lifeless before and now we're alive! They began to think "them little selves", they still couldn't say anything, they didn't speak. I wonder how hot and bothered human beings are, things for them go the opposite way! First they are born, then they die! Instead we are lifeless and then become alive but then we die again, we aren't born again like them! We're dead, inert, switched off, and then we live! A real cellular thrill.

Well, at a certain point, these little mono-cellular beings got fed up of being mono-cellular and said: "What a bore! Let's become multi-cellular!" So, always by chance, they developed into beings with several cells. Those were the times! If I just think that when I leave fruit on the table for a week it goes off whereas at that time it would do so many wonderful things. Chance really worked hard when after a billion years of exhausting work, made of experiments, tests, failures, defeats and then suddenly an animal cell - well we're going a little too far now. Well, a skin cell that didn't yet know what it was, decides to become a red corpuscle! At a certain point there is a sort of cell revolution and some decide to become red corpuscles, others white corpuscles. Chance got angry then and the first thing it said was: "Do you know how long it takes to change into red and white corpuscles? At least 2 or 3 billion years! I've got no time to waste!" Anyway, the cell's patience won and so, slowly, slowly, as everything in nature goes on able-bodied, without problems, they all changed from horrible fatty mono-cellular organisms into magnificent living beings, some, namely the chromosomes of the DNA family, were also snobs as they said they knew everything! Every time a cell wanted to do something alone - I don't know, say it wanted to become hair- some mob from the DNA family came and said: "You're gonna be a nail, got it?" (that's how the human mafia mentality began). So, it was a great mess during these billion years in which fortune was in charge: blood vessels, brain cells, articulations, a great work to develop the highest being, its masterpiece: It's true, wasn't easy to give "Mankind" intelligence, in fact among those also living now some have forgotten about it but phew what a hassle! Spirit! Damn, fate needed at least ten billion years to get the right combination! But at the end, it managed and 40 billion years to make a masterpiece... by chance! And now we find ourselves complimenting this magnificent fortune! Mankind has an established shape, it doesn't change; at a certain point, cells stopped being proactive and nothing else was made, no other heart, not even a third hand, actually those with an extra or a missing chromosome have many problems. Strange, history only goes up to 3000 years before Christ. Is it possible that mankind lived for million of years without doing anything and then in the last seven-eight thousand years it created civilisation, writing, music, wars and so forth!

There is an element of mankind that makes the evolution theory impossible: “the question”. Mankind asks itself and requests answers, mankind pursues until it is not completely satisfied; this is a unique mechanism that God inserted into mankind so that it could look for it to attain salvation: *“Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are very religious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I to you. God that made the world and all things in it, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if perhaps they might grope after him, and find him, though he is not far from every one of us: For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.”* (Acts 17:22-28). Human gullibility and presupposition make you consider the universe with a poor view, focused on mankind in which the human being is at the centre of everything, following a limited logic in which, due to human experience, everything must have a beginning and an end as forecast by human mentality standards, depending on time. Poor fight to demonstrate their theory, who knows God explores Creation passionately.

Reality is very different from what can be apparent through a superficial analysis. God has always existed and for nature everything is eternal including people. However, God has the characteristic of being able to generate matter from His energy. In other words, He allows some matter to exist although it may not have followed an evolutionary development. So everything God does, as the eternal being, is eternal, real, alive. We could call this an “unintentional divine law” for the existence of God; in other words, every real thing is accordingly and unquestionable; time will however reveal its real quintessence. Human mentality is, due to spiritual reasons, full of messages opposing God, His truth and His laws. Our brain has created “Synapses” based on false beliefs the Bible calls “effectiveness of error”: *“And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all may be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.”* (II Thes.2:11-12). This means that it is possible – the “spiritual disease” is very widespread – that the human brain is not able to understand the truth behind matter, laws of physics, chemistry and life even when it is right in front of their eyes.

The only way out for mankind in this situation is to forget about pride, personal human beliefs and actually go against these and after a careful analysis of circumstances say a specific prayer to God so that He will destroy and replace false beliefs: *“here is therefore now no condemnation to them who are in Christ Jesus, who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law may be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For they that are according to the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are according to the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if the Spirit of God dwelleth in you. Now if any man hath not the Spirit of Christ, he is not his.”* (Rom 8:1-9)

Based on Christian experience and due to “unintentional divine law”, we can say that God and the Holy Ghost do not really destroy our beliefs but by revealing His plan, teaches us new things that go subsequently with the old ones as explained by Paul, the Apostle: *“Therefore if any man is in Christ, he is a new creation: old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.”*

(II Cor 5:17). For this reason the path of a true Christian is difficult as he has to get through an internal battle between his old temperament and God's teaching as well as through an external battle "against the power of air".

Billions of years would have not be enough if we wanted to base ourselves on scientific calculations to explain how life as we know it has developed. In point of fact, if cells had reproduced themselves by chance they would have suffocated the universe simply with their failed attempts. The two greatest and most accepted theories contradictory to the Bible and Jesus Christ, apart from the indications of different religions are: 1) an extraterrestrial origin; the latest discovery of sugar on meteors which made news programmes announce this as the discovery that could justify the origin of life on the planet. 2) The oldest: the one correlated to fate.

However, the possibility that by chance we passed from an inorganic to an organic situation, i.e. from something lifeless to something alive, is the same as a monkey who has to write a 400 page novel by jumping on a computer keyboard (this consideration is not a joke but a scientific calculation made by a famous Ukraine scientist. I won't even try to think of how many possibilities there are that, continually by chance, one can pass from organic to intelligent life and then from intelligent to emotional and finally to spiritual life).

Instead if we analyse this scientifically, we will see that discrepancies can occur only within the same species (Mendel's laws), within fixed limits. If the average metamorphosis rate were 1 on 100,000, a cell undergoing 5 simultaneous metamorphosis would correspond to an average 100,000,000 individuals whose generation would last one day (whilst for mankind it lasts years), one single being would witness this metamorphosis once every 274 billion years. *It is strange not to say stupid to think that incredible "fate" has worked for thousand of years for making living, perfect, spectacular creatures and then retired.* If there is no "mother" cooking the family dies of starvation. The supporters of fate seem more stoned by fantasies than analysing realities. Galilei and Newton were believers and I don't think they could have discovered what they did if their knowledge had not been based on the knowledge of God.

The logical and honest conclusion weigh against the analysis of possibilities and compared to fate is that someone else made life and organised it as we know it at present and this someone is God.

So, if the universe and ourselves are the features and product of God's will, how come there is so much violence, conflicts, maltreatment, abuse and exploitation in our Society?

Could it be that this God made some mistake? Maybe He forgot some characteristics during the making of His Plan? Did something go wrong? And subsequently, once the universe was finished where did the Creator go? It couldn't have been easy to make the Universe, create the solar system, establish the laws of physics and Chemistry, develop the DNA of each living creature, establish biological cycles. This God did a very big and hard job that is perfect on the one hand as demonstrated by the ecological balance, our immune system and all our environment but on the other hand there are creatures, men who love, hate, are born, die, laugh, suffer, analyse, sing, create, devastate, form coalitions and fight one another. All bleak entities are not pushed by any kind of demands or difficulty while people who have a soul are always looking for something and aren't satisfied until they find a balance or give up.

Where there is spiritual activity there is mankind; where there is mankind there is conflict and antagonism. All damages and crimes tarnishing and violating the equilibrium of the earth, either material or psychological, are caused by mankind and by its work. People do not consider God, so statistically this means he doesn't really exist! Alright: making the universe is not easy, such a complex job made by someone who is ignored by most of mankind but how can it be possible that this someone is no longer around, has suddenly vanished?

God creates the universe and then disappears! How can such a thing be possible? Such a accurate, meticulous person, so perfect, the inventor of love and human feeling suddenly dissolves and never

comes back. This could be true if people thought this is what could establish if something is real or not. But reality and truth are self-determining on what people believe.

If we analyse society there is a lot of perplexity. Believers accept as true only one supposition for justifying life: this was created by God; God told us in the Bible! Evolutionists, many scientists and ordinary people believe each and every one was born by chance, continues due to chance and, in any case, if God exists He is distant, indefinable, complicated to reach; history and events are due to accidental situations. As a matter of fact those who don't believe in creation need more faith than Christians as they have to believe in an unlimited series of assumptions most of which cannot be scientifically verified and are incongruous if compared to one another.

According to the Christian vision, the history of mankind has a relatively precise date. If we then accurately understand this and use the present resources for measuring this time we can establish precisely when Adam and Eve appeared. This statement are dissimilar to some scientific situations who declare that mankind appeared two or more million years ago.

On the other hand God has made us accustomed to appraising the contrast between appearance and realism. The Gospel talks about Jesus who multiplied bread and fish. The disciples dispersed the *food that apparently was much older than reality*. The multiplied, distributed, eaten and digested bread had not been produced by any bakery or wheat; it had neither been grinded, harvested, grown nor sown. Accordingly we can see that when God intervenes He creates a source of events that for us human beings, who are limited in time and knowledge and unable to create certain things, retain a different age from the actual one. If someone from this day and age, ignorant towards God, could go back in time and evaluate a mound of ground completed by God the day before, he could not convince himself of the truth if not through faith.

Science, in particular physics demonstrates the existence of God but cannot explain an event generated by a situation caused by an act of God rather than it being the natural evolution of events in time.

Without Faith it is impossible to understand the Plan of God. Its conception comes exclusively from a vigilant reading of the Bible.

If Christianity is the faith inside the Bible, atheism is the belief in nothing, i.e. by fate. An atheist needs a lot more faith than a Christian but this faith does not guide them to the glory of God, it does not save them, it leads them to eternal death.

The Atheists psychological impediment is that their brainpower isn't capable of expanding their views. It is unlikely because of their human beliefs, a status they need to hang firmly on, so as to give themselves assurance of some sort of interior sanctuary, a psychological and rational manner of thoughts. Their dignity changes into antipathy towards everything that belongs to God and impedes them from losing ground from those positions.

On the contrary, believers are conscious of being God's creatures and get close to creation in a modest approach without the obstacles or discrimination contained in the analysis of the universe.

No human being with common sense that can honestly face "reason", he cannot say that reason is the result of evolution. There is no scientific finding that can argue the existence of the Creator if not through complex discussions and suppositions that cannot be scientifically reproduced. As a scientific theory, evolution is below the third level of scientific credibility. The first level is given by the equations describing the theory, the second by Galilean type of measurements that make the third level - a mathematic formula of evolution - possible.

Real science is the analysis of creation, not to be confused with technique that is often subjective and speculative appliance of scientific discoveries. The roots of science is intellectual modesty. An atheist is by delineation "pretentious" as he believes he knows everything and, therefore, will never be a good scientist, his discoveries without fear of God could become dangerous for all mankind.

Those Christians who have not been "insensitive" by the "short term" selfish view of those who close their eyes to eternal life, are similar to somebody living on the top of a hill dominating a great plain and watching the sun rise or go down is something to be witnessed, where our view moves

towards the horizon without finding any obstacles. Those who don't know the plan of God live their lives as if in a room where the air is musty and where he continues trying to put things in the past, to "look for himself" but there is always someone else spoiling things, living day by day and taking pleasure in "what they think they have" knowing that sooner or later it will come to a conclusion. Life without God is based on a lean but steadily effectual resentment and melancholy; a typical characteristic of those who don't have a genuine relationship with the living God which is significant and consistent solitude. No one without God's spirit in them can courageously say: "he who has eternal life ... don't really care!"

LEAVES AND SEASONS

“Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When its branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near: So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. Verily I say to you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things shall be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.” (Mat 24:32-35).

Relating present life facts by comparing them with the return of Christ can be considered as catastrophism? Great newspaper headlines on possible bacteriological or nuclear attacks, influencing and upsetting people with information whose only defence is the knowledge of the truth aren't catastrophism?

Zaderk is often make fun of, accused of living in another world, in his own personal dimension but his manner of acting is always sensible as well as essentially and definitely serene. People say he is obsessed with prophecies; he has also opened up a site called “rapimento.com” (rapture.com) containing numerous information based on the Bible, some of it also monotonous and with disagreements with the official outlook of the Catholic Church as well as with ecumenism distended to all religions.

But then unexpectedly September 11th comes and the whole world is left uncertain, countless people rush to verify whether Nostradamus had predicted the attack against America; soon after the attack numerous e-mails enclosing fake Nostradamus quatrains were sent around. Others instead, opened up the Bible and looked up the Book Revelation to try and understand if we were facing something catastrophic for the whole planet. Zaderk is now a valid consultant, someone able to fill that knowledge hole better than any wizard or fortune teller. Questions pour in and they are always the same. Zaderk's eyes vigilantly observe the interested look of those listening to the description of the future of the planet. Even before the attack, mankind had 1 multiplied 10⁹⁹ reasons to know about the prophecies but everyone was distracted by thousands of other things; now the feeling of a possible global catastrophe is stronger than ever and the western world is facing an enemy who no longer gives importance to life, an enemy that has been “clichéd” to a point that killing the “infidels” implies that the gates of heaven open up for you. People who have to travel by plane are terrorised. They say “what if my plane is high jacked? *My allies should knock it down!*” Terrorism has made enormous progress, its next action could be much more sensational than the New York and Washington attacks, more people will die, more distress and terror will be caused. It gives the impression that Satan himself is terrorising the earth.

But Simon, a father of three, with Jewish origins who converted to Christ, had to close a big business deal that day and went to the office very early. He had his breakfast in the restaurant on the top floor at 7.30, read a passage of the Bible, prayed to the Lord for himself, his family and his loved ones. The passage was: *“And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple. And Jesus said to them, See ye not all these things? verily I say to you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said to them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in various places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated by all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall become cold. But he that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a*

testimony to all nations; and then shall the end come.”(Mat. 24:1:14). Every time Simon found himself reading this prophecy of Jesus he could not stop himself about thinking of the meaning of life and the future of mankind. Simon was a member of the world’s leading economic environment, no place was more important than New York, the Gross National Product (GNP) of the twin towers on its own was higher than a group of small countries. He was a Christian and a Jew who came from a family of strong traditions. Any occasion was a good one to test his faith and beliefs.

THE Hebrew Calvary	
Period	Description
70	Jewish war in Jerusalem: about 1.100.000 Hebrew dead
115-117	Cyprus, Egypt, Cyren, Palestine, Mesopotamia (Revolt against the Romans): hundreds of thousands of Hebrews killed, 40.000 exiled from Cyprus
132-135	Insurrection under the reign of Bar Kochba: Cesar Adrian killed 530.000 Hebrews and because the war other 500.000 men died.
415	100.000 Hebrews of Alexandria of Egypt robbed and sent away
499	Persecutions in Persia
581	persecutions in Persia and Babylon
632	exile from Arabia by Moslem hands
640,721,873,930	Oppression of the Hebrews in the Byzantine kingdom
1015	12.000 Hebrews killed in Cairo
1033	6.000 Hebrews killed in Fez (Morocco)
1066	5.000 Hebrews killed in Granada
1096	12.000 Hebrews killed in the territory of the Rhine
1099	Hebrews massacred in Jerusalem
1146	Oppression of the Hebrews in Spain
1150	Mass persecutions against the Hebrews in Tunisia
1232	Massacre of the Hebrews in Marrakech and persecution in the whole Morocco
1236	3.000 Hebrews killed in France
1270	Persecutions of mass in Tunisia
1290	370.000 Hebrews deported from England
1298	100.000 Hebrews killed in Franconia and Baviera
1306	Deportation of the Hebrews from France
1348/49	1.000.000 of Hebrews massacred in Europe during the years of the Plague
1355	12.000 Hebrews massacred in Toledo by the hand of the Arabic herd
1345-1360	Deportation of the Hebrews from Hungary
1391-97	Massacre of the Hebrews in Spain
1391	50.000 Hebrews killed in Palm - Spain
1420	Jewish communities of Toulouse destroyed
1421	Deportation of the Hebrews from Austria
1495	Deportation of the Hebrews from Lithuania
1497	Deportation of the Hebrews from Sicily, Sardinia and Portugal
1502	Hebrews deported oppressed and reduced under slavery in Rhodos
1541	Deportation of the Hebrews from the kingdom of Naples
1648-1656	100.000 Hebrews killed in the massacre of Chmielnicki (Poland)
1727-1747	Deportation of the Hebrews from Russia
1785	Bloody persecution in Libya
1864-1880	500 Hebrews killed in Morocco
1871-1921	Persecution of mass of the Hebrews in a lot of cities of Russia
1939-1945	6.000.000 of Hebrews exterminated from the Nazi and from their numerous European collaborators

He had a cosy childhood. After escaping the Nazis during the second world war, his parents had attained a good economical position, their children had all been well educated and Simon had graduated at Cambridge. They had escaped to Switzerland and with a few Francs in their pockets they obtained a visa for the USA in spite of the restrictions regarding Jewish immigration. They had thought about going to Palestine but apart from the difficulties due to the many areas controlled by the Nazis, the land did not offer many chances for economic development; besides, the relationship with the British authorities was not very good and the risk would have been to jump out of the frying pan into the fire. So they took advantage of the “Grand Council for war refugees”, an organisation created by Roosevelt but financed by Jews, and together with another 200,000 Jews got their visa for the USA. His grandparents were not so fortunate and were killed in Russia by the Einsatzgruppen, groups of 500-900 men who followed the Nazi army invading groups in Russia and deported all Jews, accused them of being communists or partisans and – sometimes with the participation of the Russians – killed them. Simon’s grandparents were killed in one of the first lorries used as a gas chamber. The Germans started using gas chambers to avoid direct contact with those being killed since this was causing a great deal of distress in the Kommando squads.

Simon knew that wars were a sign of the times, they pronounced the return of Christ just like earthquakes and famines, ethnic and regional conflicts, all things that are part of mankind’s intolerance towards the Plan of God and the authority of the Bible. He also knew that the openness, sincerity and joy of Christianity would diminish due to the increase of injustice. He was not scared of facing the truth nor of reality. He was aware that knowing the circumstances helped you to face them better. His youth studies of the “Torah” and the Prophets made in the Synagogue had taught his brain to think, reflect and analyse; once he had discovered Jesus, all these techniques together with the help of the Holy Ghost, had turned him into a awesome witness and careful scholar of the Word of God. He had recognised that the Jewish people he belonged to were the living proof of the constancy of the Bible’s message. There had never been a population without a land, that had undergone such exceedingly brutal persecutions throughout the centuries yet had survived and maintained its traditions intact and every year renewed the prophecy “next year in Jerusalem!”.

A deep study of the Bible, both of the Old and New Testament, had revealed to him God’s view, a straightforward, regular, well planned and studied vision.

THE BIBLE'S VIEW

God created the universe following a specific logic and sequence:

- On the first day he created the skies and the earth that were formless and empty; darkness covered the void so He created light and then separated light from darkness.
- On the second day He separated the sky from water.
- On the third day he gathered the water under the sky into one place, thus seas and aridness were made. He commanded that the earth produce vegetables and fruit trees with their seeds where other plants came from.
- On the fourth day God created the Sun, the Moon and the stars, established the seasons, the days and the years.
- On the fifth day God created living creatures from water: the birds. He created the great water animals and water helped Him to produce and develop several species of animals.
- On the sixth day God made the earth produce livestock, reptiles and wild animals. Then God said: "(Genesi 1:26-30)

Therefore in God's view we – mankind – could happily live and reproduce on this earth, without death, wars, rapes, drugs, paedophiles, thefts or robberies. But God's perfection could not make us like robots. He made us free; He made us into wonderful creatures with a perfect body, a spirit and intelligence for communicating with our Creator and amongst ourselves at the same level.

Communication is an extraordinary marvellous invention that, if used in a positive manner, can be a source of peacefulness and happiness as demonstrated by the brotherly communion of those who believe in Christ. The most advanced societies, counting all the problems linked to sin, are those where human rights are treasured more and in which the authority of the Bible and Christian evidence is more developed.

In the beginning, in its freedom, mankind didn't respect God's teaching and opposed the only rule he had been given, to defy its Creator. It's true, that mankind was unquestionably tempted; nevertheless, it fell into temptation and spiritually died so everything under us became subject to a celestial curse. God made mankind recognize the penalty of its rebellion despite the fact that at the same time He was thinking of how to save us. Contrary to Satan, we human beings still have one more chance, because, while we are still alive we have the possibility to change our minds and choose to spend eternity, our following phase, with the help of Christ, together forever with God.

From a careful analysis of the Bible we can see seven well established periods in which God distributes His Grace and His Knowledge:

- The age of innocence from the creation of mankind up to when it disobeys God. The tree of good and evil witnessed the freedom mankind obtained in following God.
- The age of conscience from the fall of mankind up to floods. In this period mankind loses its path completely and its sinfulness is great.
- The age of human government. God saves eight people and gives them the foundations for law and government, making them accountable for the direction of justice. Mankind rebelled and built the tower of Babel so God was bewildered by their languages and mankind went astray (Babel means confused).
- The age of promise. God calls a man, Abraham. He sets up an agreement with him; He creates a population to whom He makes some promises, some without clauses like the Messiah, others correlated to the behaviour of the population. Israel violates these conditions and they become slaves in Egypt.
- The age of law. God proposes a new agreement to Israel based on compliance of the law. The population arrogantly thinks to honour God by observing the Laws that have been repeatedly disobeyed. The phase of law ends with the coming of Jesus Christ, the Messiah. The law establishes mankind's imperfection. Mankind is not able to save itself through its efforts but only through its faith in Christ.

- The age of grace. The death of Jesus who expiates sin for mankind introduces the period of chaste thanksgiving, the present period in which God gives justice instead of asking for it. This period ends with the judgement of the unfaithful world and apostate church. Those who have died in the name of Christ will be resurrected and taken away from the earth together with the living believers. After this period there will be a seven year Tribulation with a lot of wickedness and be controlled by the Antichrist. After this period of endurance, Jesus will come back to glory and carry out the judgements that will introduce the seventh period. Satan will be tied up and made innocuous.
- The age of the reign of Christ. A period of one thousand years in which there will be the reign of Jesus Christ on earth. The headquarters of authority will be Jerusalem, the believers of the Church will reign together with Jesus and the nation of Israel will be the light for other nations. At the end of this period, Satan will be freed and he will gather many nations against Jesus Christ who will end this period with judgement and the opening of the books and there will be the Last Judgement.

POPULATION AND NATIONS OF THE OLD TESTAMENT

Ancient Name	Orig.	Actual Nation	Ancient Name	Orig.	Actual Nation
AMOREANS	Cam	ISRAEL	AMMON	Sem	JORDAN
BABILONIA	Cam	IRAQ	CALDEA	Sem	IRAQ
CUSH	Cam	ETHIOPIA	EDOM	Sem	JORDAN
DEDAN	Cam	RODHOS	GHESHUR	Sem	N. ISRAEL
PHILISTIA	Cam	ISRAEL	IDUMEI	Sem	JORDAN
GEBUSEI	Cam	ISRAEL	JOKTAM	Sem	ARABIA
GHIRGASEI	Cam	ISRAEL	KEDAR	Sem	ARABIA
HIVVEI	Cam	ISRAEL	MADIAN	Sem	SINAI-JORDAN
LUD	Cam	TURKEY	MOAB	Sem	JORDAN
MITSRAIM	Cam	EGYPT	ARAM	Sem	SIRIA
PUT	Cam	LIBYA	ARPACSHAD	Sem	IRAQ
SCEBA	Cam	YEMEN	ASSIRIA	Sem	IRAQ
SCINEAR	Cam	IRAQ	EBER	Sem	IRAQ
SIDON	Cam	LEBANON	ELAM	Sem	IRAN
CANAAN	Cam	ISRAEL	GHETER	Sem	SYRIA
ETHIOPIA	Cam	ETHIOPIA	HUL	Sem	SYRIA
SUMERI	Cam	IRAQ	OFIR	Sem	OMAN ?
			PELEG	Sem	IRAQ
			ZU	Sem	SYRIA

Ancient Name	Orig.	Actual Nation	Ancient Name	Orig.	Actual Nation
ASHKENAZ	Japhet	IRAN	BASAN	GA	ISRAEL
KITTIM	Japhet	CYPRUS	GOSCEN	GA	NORTH EGYPT
DODANIM	Japhet	GREECE	HARMAGHED ON	GA	ISRAEL
ELISHA	Japhet	GREECE	HOREB	GA	SOUTH SINAI
GOMER	Japhet	TURCHIA	LEBANON	GA	LEBANON
JAVAN	Japhet	GREECE	MEGIDDO	GA	ISRAEL
MADAI	Japhet	IRAN	PADDAN-ARAN	GA	IRAQ
MAGOG	Japhet	CECENIA AZERBAIJAN	PERSIA	GA	SOUTH IRAN
MESCEC	Japhet	GEORGIA ARMENIA TURKEY	SCINEAR	GA	IRAQ
RIFAT	Japhet	TURKEY			
TARSIS	Japhet	SPAIN ?			
TIRAS	Japhet	GREECE			
TOGARMA	Japhet	TURKEY			
TUBAL	Japhet	TURKEY			
HITTITIANS	Japhet	TURKEY			
MEDIA	Japhet	NORTH IRAN	GA = ARGEOGRAPHIC AREA		

THE VIEW

The eyes facing the great blue sky from the windows of the World Trade Center gives an idea of the knowledge of God. Simon knew Him well; he knew that one fine day, sooner or later, he would have met God either dead or alive amidst the clouds. Maybe the meeting on the clouds was not possible today because in the clear New York morning sky of September 11th there were no signs of clouds. In the peace of solitude, in front of such a wonderful creation it filled one's heart with bliss, a special ecstasy known only by those who know Christ and the Plan of God, something that only those who have experimented the communion with God can experience. He can feel his lungs filling up, a shiver embraces him reaching to his most intimate parts. The knowledge of God has also an emotional reaction though distant from exhibitionism, turmoil, aggressiveness and intimidating ways that some preachers use. It is a peaceful, quiet, private, sole relationship for each one of us, that is confirmed day in, day out.

Today is a special day as well as under an emotional point of view. Simon feels as if God wants to comfort and embrace him in a special manner as if something had bid him to stop and look at the landscape just as if it were for the last time. Simon used to work in the south tower; he had the opportunity to enjoy the most spectacular view of the city in the world. This morning his eyes could not move from the blue landscape covering the entire city under the shining sun ,at 8 in the morning of a summers day makes everything seem gentle, soft, optimistic not in any way invading.

But the world is full of wickedness. An enormous amount of people are willing to kill and die for a human ideal, a piece of land that doesn't even belong to them since we come into this world naked and we leave this world naked and all that Simon has seen up to now is nothing but *"the principle of pain"* because Jesus in the passage delivered before states was that Christians will be loathed and oppressed, there will be further evil actions, tolerance towards what is said within in the Gospel will always become less widespread, still the message at the same time will spread all over the world.

Simon had to deal with Managers everyday who although had a lot of much money would not be able to spend it all even if they lived for ten lives, existing only with the impatience to reach their next target – financially established– leaving little room for their emotions or for the love of their families, no indication on reality and the essence of life. You must be very careful how you speak to them not to inconvenience them. You must keep them happy and offer them a great big cigar. All their time is structured around profit, both work and leisure time, work lunches, golf matches to talk about business and so forth. Their children scarcely remember their odour though they all bathe in tubs with golden taps made of Carrara marble.

The human mind is globally obscured; there aren't anymore places in the world in which mankind has not abandoned the basic values of human existence to dedicate itself to the activities formed for satisfying our immediate desires. Society has reduced the time available; *we rush for doing more things in less time in order to have more time to do more things.*

Simon is alone with his cup of coffee, in the background he can hear **"they dance alone"** by Sting, the song dedicated to Argentinean "desaparecidos". So much hate in this world for power and money; so much wickedness, so many deaths. All this for something linked to this life, something infinitely small compared to eternity. Simon remembers when he was in England during the Falklands war, a stupid war started by Argentinean giunta to distract people from the horrors and the blood of their persecutors. He thinks back to the time when he used to meet with Zaderk before work and they would go and get an Italian cappuccino at the Costa Coffee bar in St. Paul's. He used to like thinking about the day they would have met with Paul the Apostle, Matthew, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Daniel and, who knows, maybe Moses. Zaderk used to make him observe that they were all important brothers of Christ just like those sitting in church on Sunday mornings. Christian faith was deep-rooted in the two friends and spiritual brothers; this convinced them they would one day personally thank Daniel, a special brother towards whom they were particularly grateful for the knowledge of upcoming things of the book of Revelation as well as, in particular, the knowledge

of precedent things. The learning of the book of Daniel made them understand History, discover and be devoted to it as all prophecies which came about were a reference point for a chronological reconstruction of History from Babylon to Rome.

Now Simon's eyes were following the river Hudson, the last greeting to a special New York morning. Real peace is the one experimented in oneself regardless of circumstances, events and perspectives; a peace similar to that established by a powerful army occupying a contended land. This was the kind of peace Simon felt whenever he embraced the city with his eyes. But now it was late. 8.15, the appointment was at 9 on the 74th floor but first Simon had to go to his office on the 56th floor to get some documents. The lift went at a speed of 8 meters per second and in few minutes Simon was in his office. The entire 56 floor belonged to Morgan Stanley; many colleagues were beginning to take their places every one but the Dealers who worked on the European market as they had already been there for hours. Work starts at 9 so those who arrives early have time to relax and take a very long coffee, maybe change shoes, taking off their sneakers and putting on their high heeled shoes – the women – or moccasins – for the men.

THE HUMAN ADVENTURE BEGINS

In the beginning, human society developed as an opponent to God. There is no reference, no clear and organised evidence of God. The characteristics of society are misrepresentation and violence that reaches a point in which God establishes the first judgement for all mankind and erases it completely with the Flood leaving only Noah and his family. After this judgement He establishes a new agreement with mankind, i.e. Noah's three children: Shem, Cam and Japheth who become the founders of three main ancestry of mankind. Shem's son – Abraham – is the founder of Israel; in Israel many people are born and decide to follow God and God gives them "The Law", makes them know we must pay for our sins and tells them the future of the Nations. How can this God, suddenly pop out after centuries, be recognised among the many more famous gods? Simple: He is supreme and Omniscient, He also knows the future! He communicates with His creatures, He is not a statue, He has prophets who make precise and specific prophecies on the nation of Israel, its people and other nations. God uses Prophecies as an evidence of His existence, of who He is. God wanted to give His opponent an advantage to satisfy the need of justice. He wanted to demonstrate that there is really a difference between good and evil, justice and injustice. Truth, knowledge of God, His justice will prevail in time so that life can begin and develop.

Through Israel God states in the Old Testament His Plan and Strategy to save mankind from rebellion, a sin we are born with. We must pay for this sin; therefore God incarnates into Jesus Christ and dies to pay our price, i.e. God repairs the damage caused by our choices.

Israel becomes the reference point on earth for prophecies. The Bible describes all the following phases from the Assyrian deportation in 722 B.C. to the diffusion of the population in the North Israel reign called Judas by Nabucodonosor in Babylon in 605 B.C.. So **during the existence of Israel** the Bible begins to reveal that there were going to be five great reigns representing the world's order: the Babylonian Reign, replaced then by the Medes and Persians who were then going to be defeated by a Greek king: Alexander the Great who would have not maintained his reign that was going to be divided into four parts then being dominated by a violent reign, strong as iron who would treat Israel and its people with unseen violence: The Romans. This fourth reign would destroy the nation of Israel and stop the prolongation of the prophecies on the nations. But at the end of time a fifth reign would rise and would use Israel to enforce itself. This means that Israel must be rebuilt before the end of time; the prophetic future of the Bible starts becoming clear.

From the message contained in the Bible we understand that God wants to reveal His Plan for mankind to believers and scholars of His word and He does so by revealing all the sequence of events regarding the Nations compared to Israel. Though He has revealed the sequence of events, God did not reveal the dates in which His Word will become true but for the coming of Christ as our saviour 483 years after the rebuilding of the Jerusalem walls destroyed by Nabucodonosor, the 7-year duration of the reign of the Antichrist and the duration of the reign of Christ, i.e. 1000 years.

The prophecies of the Bible announce way in advance:

1. The coming of the Messiah who would suffer and die for the people. A prophecy that came true with Jesus Christ 2000 years ago.
2. The coming of the Messiah into glory as a military liberator of the oppressed Israel has suffered. This prophecy will become true in Armageddon after the 7-year suffering dominated by the Antichrist. The number of prophecies on the Messiah as a political liberator is eight times higher than that on the Messiah paying the price for mankind.
3. The reign of peace in which the Messiah will reign and Israel will be the keeper of evidence and in which all former oppressors of the Jews now rise to adore the King of Kings. This reign will come after the 7-year suffering and will last 1000 years.
4. The ferocity of the Antichrist and his great violence for removing Israel and boosting himself up above God and any other human power is a polyvalent Prophecy and is applicable for Antiochus Epiphan, the behaviour of Imperial Rome and the future Antichrist government during the 7-year Tribulation.

5. The future of Nations called by their names and the order of the reigns dominating the earth during the life of Israel. 80% of these prophecies have already come about as we have already had 4 of 5 world empires during the life of Israel “on the land of its fathers”. The fifth reign is the future; it will have a worldwide power and will be governed by the Antichrist, it will be supported by ten governments and it will seem as if the Roman Empire had been restored. It will confuse the entire world and at first Israel will confuse it with the Messiah. It will guarantee peace and security in Palestine. It will be able to control the population, finance, trade, movements and lifestyle. even if its means it will organise a more profound control than that of SS, KGB, CIA, Mao and Ceaucescu’s secret police put together and what’s worse is that the world’s population will accept all this situation perfectly.
6. It makes sense to believe that the areas between the Black and Caspian Sea, Baku, Chechnya, Azerbaijan, Georgia, Armenia and part of Turkey will integrate and organise themselves politically, economically and militarily, maybe through a war as, at a certain point, an attack on Israel will be launched from this area: “(Ezech. 38:2-16)”. God Himself, probably in a supernatural way will intervene to defend Israel and consequently to reveal His existence to all nations.

HIGH TECHNOLOGY

Simon is an expert in computer systems and also an excellent Bible scholar. He knows that the Jews will endure Great suffering as described in Mark's Gospel: *'For in those days shall be affliction, such as hath not been from the beginning of the creation which God created to this time, neither shall be. And except the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.'* (Mark 13:19-20). Simon knows that the situation of mankind will not improve but actually degenerate. He knows that there will be a total, economic, financial, political and religious globalisation. There will be total control on the world's population; nothing will be bought or sold without a particular code (666). There will be an interactive control on each person up to a point that the central organisation will be able to know if someone is behaving as expected when facing an interactive image. Simon's mind travels from one topic to another; his brain is always working making suppositions, analyses and evaluations. He knows perfectly that human conflicts will increase and probably he is enjoying a moment of peace and affluence that sooner or later will end, to be sacrificed by human sinfulness and rebellion. The core of each struggle is Palestine as stated by Luke in the passage parallel to that of Matthew 24 and Mark 13, namely: *"And when ye shall see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then know that her desolation is near. Then let them who are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them who are in the midst of it depart from it; and let not them that are in the countries enter into it. For these are the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe to them that are with child, and to them that nurse infants, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles shall be fulfilled."*(Luke 21:20-24). Also in Revelation for what concerns Jerusalem during the Great Tribulation: *"And there was given me a reed like a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship in it. But the court which is outside the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given to the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months."* (Rev 11:1-2). 42 months correspond to three and a half years. Therefore, there will be a moment in which Jerusalem will return to Non-Jews (Gentiles) and knowing the Jewish people, this will not be without pain.

Simon is Jewish and follows with great attention the Palestine situation. He is aware of the Islamic hatred towards him; Hamas and Hezbollah's declarations, whose only target is to eliminate Israelis, sound to him like a personal threat; when Islamic fundamentalists encourage all the Arab world to personally kill at least one Jew in order to eliminate all of them in small period, Simon knows that threat is applicable to him.

But the evidence of God's work through Christ is present in the Evangelic church he attends. Many brothers there are reformed Arabs with whom he shares a real brotherly and eternal love. This is evidence that "race" as such is an invention of mankind as Einstein knew very well when answering the question "What's your race" he said: "human!".

It is clear that if the plan of the Antichrist is to unite all mankind by globalising it at all levels in order to control the existence of each human being in all parts of the world, he must use very sophisticated systems of a currently inconceivable technological level. At present through Christians the Holy Ghost is restraining the growth of the so-called "mystery of sinfulness" which basically corresponds to Satan and his manner of acting. Christian evidence is a limit and, at the same time an opposing force to the development of an anti-Christian way of life that is becoming stronger and stronger as the end of time gets closer when "the prince of this world" will be judged and the present age will end: *"After this I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me."*(John. 14:30). Simon remembers every day that our Lord Jesus could come back to do away with the Church. After this, mankind's darkest moment will begin; the real human nature, devoid of the presence of God, will be revealed; there will be a 7-year

Tribulation; earth will experiment the culmination of living without a God in a world ruled by Satan, the being that mankind through its rebellion will have raised as its god and lord.

For Simon all this is not the result of speculation, philosophical tales heard in church nor of paranormal meetings but the result of a careful and meticulous reading of the Bible and the literal assimilation of the teaching of Paul the Apostle: “*Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together to him, That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ has come. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what restraineth (The Holy Ghost) that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now restraineth will do so, until he be taken out of the way (The Rapture of the Church). And then shall that Wicked be revealed (The Antichrist), whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him (The Antichrist), whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deception of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all may be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness* (all those that refused Christ’s salvation though they knew about it)”(II Tess 2:1-12) (the text in brackets is from the author).

Though Simon is well-known in his profession, earns a good salary and has learning skills higher than average, he never refuses to share his Christian faith with others, his life’s understanding and experience under the light of God. He does not loathe nor fight technology, globalisation or anti-Semitism which he must often face. He knows that all these are necessary areas indicated in the Gospel that must be faced as they are part of the Plan of God. Simon jokingly witnesses his Christian faith by repeating to his American friends and colleagues something an Italian friend of his named Zaderk taught him in England: “He who has everlasting life it bounces off him!” a sort of translation that his Roman colleague, friend and brother in Christ used to say – “*Chi c’ha la vita eterna je rimbalza*”, i.e. who has eternal life ... don’t really care!”. This expression - often not understood – was part of Zaderk’s jargon. Now Zaderk has returned to Rome from London. They spent hours together discussing technical aspects linked to computer science and Simon still contacts him by e-mail for advice or opinions on some technical options. But principally Zaderk was a brother in Christ with whom Simon shared his own faith and witnessing.

Simon appreciated Zaderk’s sincerity, his straightforwardness mixed with proficiency towards the evilness of this world. Zaderk spoke four languages: Italian his mother tongue, English he had learnt it in England, French it was his family’s mother tongue and, though it was weak, Turkish since his mother’s family had emigrated to Turkey in 1600. Simon pulled his leg by calling him “The Marquee of Rome” since he had a noble title, had been brought up with a meticulous and multilingual education – his grandfather spoke seven languages: the same four as Zaderk in addition to German, Greek and Persian. Nevertheless, Zaderk had at the same time grown up in the streets of Rome during the sixties, making friends with people of all classes.

Zaderk’s grandfather was born in Smyrna – Turkey - a very rich family. His mother was from Austria and his father from Italy. He lost almost everything during world war I. He began to work for a Dutch sailing company as “super-cargo” for the transport of coal via sea from the Black Sea to Smyrna. In 1922 there was the Smyrna fire and during this incident he took the initiative and the responsibility of taking over 600 refugees on board and transporting them to Mytilene while other refugees who had jumped in to the water in the harbour because of the fire were thrown back in the water by the English ships so as to avoid any diplomatic dilemmas with the raising government of Ataturk.

Zaderk’s grandfather’s house was destroyed by the fire.



His grandfather told him that during the Greek-Turkish war his family was saved because they had exposed the Italian flag on top of their roof. Instead the Greek houses had the heads of their inmates hanging on the fences and if you walked along by the beach there were thousands of bodies on the sea coast.

In 1923 he married Zaderk's grandmother and after some time went to work for Oriental Carpet in Smyrna, then moved to Persia where he stayed for seven years up to 1935. At that point he moved to Rhodes which in the meantime had become an Italian colony. All the family produced raisins. Zaderk's grandfather had patented a machine that carried out all the industrial process for the production of dried fruit. They also produced distillates under the license of great Italian brand-names. During the war Zaderk's family moved to Senigallia until they began bombing the Marches coast; then they decided to relocate more internally to a town called Piticchio. Zaderk's grandmother was a great woman, a perfect organiser for logistics and provisions; the large family was never without food during the war due to the sales of jewels and clothes it was enough to buy sufficient supplies of flour, oil and stockfish to last them throughout the war. They rented a part of a house located on the top of a hill on the edge of town that looked more like a little castle than a normal house. After September 8th the area was occupied by the Germans and revived by some partisan groups; some of Zaderk's uncles were also members of these groups. One day the German troops were rounding up people and every young man was arrested and then either shot or sent to a concentration camp because he was considered a partisan member. Zaderk's grandmother and her sister from the window saw a man running away in terror and told him to run towards the house; they hurried downstairs to open the door and let him in. Zaderk's grandmother brought him into a room and hid him in an enormous wardrobe. A little later the Germans approached holding their machineguns and wanted to enter and search for any partisans. They also pointed a machinegun at the stomach of the girl that would to be Zaderk's mother and continued to yelling "partisan", "partisan". Zaderk's grandfather who spoke perfect German explained there were no partisans in the house since they were refugees from the isle of Rhodes. This all took place while the Jew was in the wardrobe doubtlessly holding his breath. If he had been found, everyone would have been shot without a second thought. But Zaderk's grandfather's words were convincing and the German soldiers left without any additional searches. A few weeks later a group of Wehrmacht officers and a red-haired SS officer on leave decided to set up their headquarters in the house rented to Zaderk's family. Thanks to Zaderk's grandfather's perfect German, Zaderk's family was not left disbanded in case of the take over of the location. They agreed that each group could use part of the rooms and established shifts at agreed times for the dining room and the kitchen. The officer had a little chef with very little to cook just black dry bread, tins of smelly meat and nothing else. Out of sympathy Zaderk's grandmother decided to provide them on a daily basis for the ten days of "occupation" a

great dish of hand made fettuccine which was part of their daily meal. Zaderk's grandfather spoke with the commander in chief and the other officers but the red-haired officer was different from the others; he verified, listened, spied, no-one was able to or could criticize how the war was going or pass judgment on in some way Hitler in any way. However the commander in chief confessed: "the war is lost, we are withdrawing, if you can persuade the partisans of the area not to kill any of us we will retreat soon without any retaliation as we have orders to kill ten Italians for every German soldier killed; the red-haired officer is here to ensure we put into practice the orders of the "Führer". Kill one or ten German soldiers, what difference will it make? It will compel us to destroy the town and shoot innocent victims". So Zaderk's grandfather got in touch with one of the heads of the local partisans and explained plainly: "Do not attack the German soldiers because if you do we will all be killed women and children as well. Furthermore, they are retreating". The partisans agreed and didn't attack any German soldier situated in Piticchio. All surrounding towns were destroyed and bombed other than Piticchio. When it was time to leave the German officer said to Zaderk's family:" Up to now nobody had treated us as human beings!". Zaderk's grandfather looked him in the eyes and said:" once this damn war is over I hope you will come and visit me in Italy!". The German guy answered:" I don't think we'll meet again. Thanks for your hospitality."

World war II took everything away. The Rhodes factories and houses were gone and Zaderk's uncle died of a broken heart because of the closing of the activity. At that point after the war Zaderk's grandfather moved to Australia and started up a business that didn't do well owing to the government's restrictions on imports during the early fifties. So he decided to go back to Turkey where he had the chance to set up a new plant for printing fabrics. He collaborated with the making and development of the factory and stayed there until the Turkish government of the early sixties compelled all non-Turkish managers to leave the country. At that point, in 1961, he came back to Rome and stayed until his death in 1996 he was ninety-eight.

After his grandfather's death Zaderk collected films of the thirties and forties period, put them on video and distributed them to the family together with some thoughts:

My grandfather's films

" I'm 41 now and deep inside I don't feel very different from the Zaderk of twenty years ago. I've got a lot of white hair, kids call me sir and you can notice a certain generation gap and respect towards an older person. But deep inside it is all very different. Time is nothing but the element that links new experiences and emotions and gives you in some way more confidence in facing life but the soul is basically always young, full of expectations and skills for learning new things and live our lives day by day. This must have been the feeling my grandfather had up to his 98th year of age. The eternal kid, full of life and character up to the end, capable of speaking 7 languages, who lived in three continents and several towns always keeping the family together, especially due to my grandmother's work, often starting from zero, getting used to luxury and then losing it all, seeing the heads of Greek citizens hanging over their garden's fences during the Greek-Turkish war in Smyrna during the early 20s. Tales that filled up entire afternoons, several souvenirs and photos of an adventurous life but always with one common element: the family union. All relatives were constantly updated and often present for the most important moments of the lives of their own family as well as of those families obtained through the weddings of the many brothers. therefore at present watching the films made by my grandfather in the forties I realise more than before that I belong to a wonderful family of whom I can be proud of especially after the experience I have had in these years and having therefore realised how my life could have been if my grandparents had not been severe and vigilant in giving me a straightforward and reputable education, teaching me to separate honesty from dishonesty, loyalty from neglect, truth from lies. These teachings have influenced all my life and now I can enjoy their judgment.

Family unity in this world is like a safe fortress and shelter, a protection against the inevitable hardships of society. Now I understand why in the Bible after the creation of man and woman, even before they knew about sin and rebellion, God stated that man and woman should form a family. A concrete family makes a sound community that makes a sound society. The recent breaking up of society is evidence of the rebellion of mankind to God and the outcome of the rebellion to the values He has established.

I believe that being part of my family is a gift of God, a privilege granted to me that I must appreciate and be grateful for.

It is obvious that family just like life has no meaning if considered only for itself as you have to be a fool to think of being a living being, intelligent and able to reason but with a temporary contract for your existence. We have been put into an eternal context where the laws that rule life and the universe are strict and steady and, when possible, are changed only by mankind. We have DNA proving there is a Programmer. We have inside of us the search of God inside us, something put into us by God. We have Israel, the Prophets, the Bible, Jesus and the Church who tell and explain clearly in a simple and direct manner the plan of God but most human beings continue to ignore the divine lesson exchanging the order forced by God for survival through fierce pollution, family break ups, food, water and air poisoning, incessant wars and forever new methods for making revenue regardless of others.

It is clear that at this point my role as an evangelist acquires meaning and importance since not all the family is convinced in Jesus saving us and the Bible says that these relatives will face eternal punishment. Therefore, I've decided to do whatever I can so that all my relatives in Italy, Austria, France, Belgium, England, United States, Australia and Turkey and in the rest of the world know that the plan of God is good and precise, that until we are alive we must believe in our salvation through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the Cross. This because our Lord "while we were sinners, died for us on the cross" paying for our mistakes and permitting us to become part of God's "Family". Let's not be misled God cannot consider the guilty as innocent since His justice doesn't allow Him to but anyone can be vindicated if he/she will consider through his faith, heart or word Jesus as our Saviour.

My greatest satisfaction will never be experienced in this life as it will exclusively come from the reflection that many members of my family will be present in heaven thanks to my evidence. Also today I can be happy to know that my family will always be mine for eternity as God's promise is clear: "believe and you will be saved with all your family" and the Creator isn't someone who tells one thing for another, He, the inventor of gravity and electromagnetic waves, who created life cycles, drew the sky, sea, mountains, rivers, lakes and forests, created animals and us people, spectacular beings though "inventors of harms". The Lord is definitely a "faithful" and very powerful being that has demonstrated in all these years a lot of love and strength and I must be particularly grateful to Him because He has given me a wonderful family to grow up with and allowed me to live a secure life on earth."

Zaderk had spoken to Simon a lot about Turkey. The first time Zaderk went there was in 1959 when he was six month old. He went to visit his grandparents who lived in Izmir (Turkish for Smyrna), then for numerous summers with all the family as guests in friends houses or with their caravan camping in their friends gardens by the sea.

1972 was the last summer Zaderk went to Turkey with his father who died of acute leukaemia the following spring. Zaderk was thirteen, less than 1.50 meters tall, his 10 year old sister and his 23 year old brother were orphans. Zaderk's father was 47. His death left Zaderk with an emptiness that would never be filled again, just partly rewarded and engrossed through his faith in God. Death had rushed in his life bringing chaos and fear, leaving him helpless and with a craving for retribution. Zaderk did not cry on 29th April 1973 when his father died, he refused to see his father's body and asked to sleep in his grandmother's house so he wouldn't have to see his dead father he wanted to remember him alive. His mind became unfeeling, he had little response towards the outside, he couldn't cope with such a hard setback. He cried after some days, alone in his room in the dark with

his head on the cold window, standing up looking out at the lights of the cars passing by in the night, silent tears running along his cheeks and then quietly falling to the floor. There was nobody who could understand the profound heartache twisting his stomach, no-one to console him or compensate the death of his father. He was little more than a child and had to face an colossal problem such as death without any channels or understanding. It was then that Zaderk established a love-hate relationship with death that brought him to defy it by speeding with his motorbike and undertaking his military service in Folgore (Italian Paratroopers). He used to throw himself into the most dangerous and reckless events: he jumped from 19-meter high towers, went for all possible jumps both by day and night. Challenging death gave him the feeling he could touch the “enemy” that had taken his father away as if in a crazy race like brushing or touching death he could ridicule it, therefore attaining a sort of revenge.

Zaderk’s father died and was buried at the end of April together with all the accounts of his company. From that moment on, all creditors came knocking at the door whereas debtors forgot about paying their invoices or taking back the rented Olivetti machines. Zaderk said they had become friends with the bailiff although each time the bell rang every one almost had an heart attack for fear it was someone else who wanted money. The officers were generally kind and understanding; they normally took away the same things: the usual antique furniture, tables and chairs but left the television set. The silver was all hidden so it could not be confiscated. Only Olivetti withdrew all claims and, due to the circumstances, erased the debt.

Zaderk loved Turkey and talked about it as a place where everything was serene. It obviously was that way for him; he only used to go here on holiday and had always had a good relationship with people of his own age he had met in Ilica near Cesme. concrete and sincere friendships that had remained unchanged also after years – you only need a few minutes to adjust to old friends.

So one summer Zaderk and Simon decided to go to Turkey by motorbike. Simon had a four Bol d’or cylinder, 900 cc road bike while Zaderk had a Honda 600 mono-cylinder endurance bike. Every time they stopped all the local boys stopped to see the bikes as there weren’t many at the time and foreign motorbike tourism was not very common. Simon’s bike captivated more interest and success than Zaderk’s as it was a “dort piston” while the other was a “bir piston”; in other words four pistons were more interesting than one. Zaderk loved telling an incident regarding a breakdown they had, to describe Turkish courtesy and helpfulness. While they were in a town heading for Fethiye the aluminium petrol tank got a hole in it. They stopped at the first town and after they were capable of explaining the problem, the Turkish counterparts went to waken the blacksmith immediately who left his house, repaired the damage and then did not want to be paid as it had been an privilege to have solved a problem for a foreigner. It was as if oriental hospitality cult in that area had remained integral throughout time.



Turkey is a special country. If you come from Italy and travel among the ancient Greek and Roman remains in Ephesus, Hierapolis, Antalya and other beautiful places you will find more rudiments of ancient ancestry than anywhere else, even Rome. Travelling in Turkey is like having the feeling that time wanted to hold on the tastes, smells, landscapes and traditions of thousands of years ago. Probably Zaderk was personally involved in admiring the magnificent Turkish coasts and woods that fall from the Anatolian mountains down into the sea giving you – especially at sunset – a view evidence of God's art. However, he had also influenced Simon who had travelled a lot in wonderful places and used to say that the only other place where he had had the same feeling was in Sardinia, the Italian isle that God probably had drawn for last putting all the most beautiful things into it spread around the world with a sea, atmosphere and landscapes that gave you a strong feeling of peace and tranquillity.

THE CHRISTIAN EVIDENCE

The study of the plan of God for mankind is based on the belief in Jesus.

Evidence is something personal formed by living faith that changes the way of thinking and acting. The author of this change is the Holy Ghost *"13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? - But the Comforter, who is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatever I have said to you. (Luke 11:13 – John 14:26) who acts in the mind of those positively set towards Him. The spiritual "bricks" the Holy Ghosts uses are the words of the Bible, the Holy Scripture, which at is also the Sword of God: "Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God." (Luke 8:11) – "And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:" (Eph 6:17).*

There are many lines in the New and Old Testament that talk about the signs accompanying the real believer. Paul says *"I believed, therefore have I spoken: I was greatly afflicted:"* (Psalm 116:10) – *"We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak."* (II Cor. 4:13). furthermore, Jesus enlightens believers in the last chapter of Matthew (28:19): *"Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit:"*. The origin of faith on which this study is set upon are: Christ is God, the Bible is the Word of God, each Christian is a witness on earth of what God does in his heart through the Holy Ghost who lives in him *"Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God; that we may know the things that are freely given to us by God."* (I Cor. 2:12) and has to spread out His Plan.

The "Plan of God" I'm talking about is not a new revelation different from the past but only the result of a careful literal and analytic analysis of the Word of God taking originating from the fact that God in His accuracy in creation couldn't have been inexact in communicating with His privileged creature – mankind – and, what is more, couldn't have unexpectedly decided to become estranged from the context of creation.

There are many personal reflections and sometimes interpretations of circumstances and facts related to "considerations made stridently" rather than to claims coming from a special divine light. I do not believe in spectacular revelations or amazing powers in faith. The God I have been able to know in a very deep and intimate manner I have known only through the Bible and brotherly communion. He is a very discreet and kind God; He continuously warns me about those who use His name in vain and other works apparently strong that will bring a result in assets defined by mankind such as health, economic and psychological welfare, all things that are nothing to God's eyes compared to spiritual salvation. If we vigilantly analyse the Plan of God as a completely we will understand why God considers material goods, health and lifespan as injudicious things compared to the mightiness of what He has planned and is carrying out.

These reflections come from a new, revolutionary and extremely technologically advanced age in which mankind steps forward as a entity pushed by different interests. Mankind is carrying out the project that will integrate it to God; it's as if through mass communication and new technology mankind was creating omnipresence and, through great computers, omniscience similar to God. The struggle against terrorism will always thrust us more towards a immeasurable control of all people of this world through their movements or trade and finance operations. Basically we can say that the latest terrorist events have set the foundations to carry out the events indicated in Revelation 13 (11-18): *"And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and lived. And he had power to give life to*

the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, except him that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred and sixty and six.”

consequently, in a future that cannot be established there will be a situation in which an image will “have a spirit” – the Greek word is “pneuma” which means air draft – or, anyway, a living principle able to decode whether or not a eyewitness respects the image and then kills the rebellious. Furthermore, there will be a form of total and global economic control through a obligatory “brand” probably similar to a electronic signature which will be impossible to buy or sell. If we have all this we will be facing this prophecy in full.

I have no intention to demonise globalisation or new technologies nor the development of science, all things with a neutral value. Internet isn't an enemy to faith owing to the many porno sites or because it helps the development of terrorist plots; in point of fact, it is a powerful evangelisation means, a source of information for curing diseases and for scientific research. This book couldn't have been made without Internet and a powerful Personal Computer with very sophisticated programs.

The race for wanting to be like God is however an old target of His dissenters. The measures used for reaching the objective should not be condemned; what should be condemned is the internal attitude of those using the means and the targets they want to achieve.

This book will demonstrate that those who are not born again are however part of a plot they have not organized; they are struggling to “run after the wind”: *“14 I have seen all the works that are done under the sun; and, behold, all is vanity and vexation of spirit.”*(Eccl. 1:14), apparently towards objectives placed before them by Society though actually they are part of a much wider well defined, accurate and outlined situation by what the Bible calls “destiny of the Nations” related to Israel. From this study by looking up in the Bible the characters taken from recent history such as Napoleon, Mussolini, Stalin, Hitler or Saddam Hussein is something stupid and it is even more stupid to try and establish dates and terms as Jesus has clearly said we are not entitled to know: *“But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only. But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so also will be the coming of the Son of man. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord cometh.”* (Mat 24:36-42).

The future of nations has been established, defined, grinded, it can be perfectly identified through the Bible in its sequence and evolution yet not in its terms and dates. God is the only possessor of time, He is the God of Eternity *“Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his”*(Dan. 2:20) and has purposely decided not to tell anyone when He will come back. Living in our present society makes us all slaves of time. Satan knows that his moment is soon to come. Men are troubled by death, ageing and the conclusion of things. Without realising, mankind is trying to organise its time to do as many things as possible since we believe this is the way to reach eternity. This happens because mankind does not know the Plan of God. We believe that life is all here because we do not have the courage to accept the solution proposed by Christ as 100% valid. On the other hand you need strength to believe in Christ: *“And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.”*(Mat 11:12). It is not possible to be Christians without realising or wanting to nor for the determination of others; it is a individual voluntary choice of ours. God does not love half-heartedness: *“I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or*

hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.” (Rev. 3:15-16).

No person - opposite to Nations - has not had its future previously set up by God but due to free will each person can decide whether or not to accept Christ and, however, their time is in the hands of God. But the Bible confirms that God has a plan to make each person reach salvation. This is valid for Scandinavians as well as for Africans or Aborigines as God has no personal favourites.

It is clear that God in his Almightyness knows everything and everyone. He knows if someone will be saved but it is also true that God does everything possible for everybody to reach penitence: *“The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.”* (II Peter 3:9”).

THE LEADER

One night Simon wanted to know from Zaderk about his experience in a religious sect so Zaderk stayed with Simon all night to talk about the spiritual aspects that satisfies human existence. One on the sofa, and the other on the armchair.

According to Zaderk, the spiritual plague scheme always follows the same path since the inspiring “spirit” is always the same.

The fact that mankind are spiritual beings cannot be argued. The same goes for the fact that at present on this planet there is a spiritual divergence. A conflict requires two conflicting parties. For the Bible this conflict is between God and Satan; mankind with our free spirit, intellectual and creative skills is the battlefield.

Zaderk remembers that the leader of the sect often said God had given him the mission to create the group for whom he was the light. He used the Bible shrewdly and had a very deep knowledge especially of those lines that could influence the behaviour of the members in his support. There were two problems and major mistakes: the first and essential was the great use of the Bible that encouraged followers to read and meditate on the real Bible not the twisted version of the Jehovah’s Witnesses or Mormons. This use made God work in all members of the group and created a very deep knowledge of the Bible. The other mistake was to lie brazenly on certain aspects of his private life, hiding certain things that later suddenly came out stridently and shattered all his little world. The sect was then free but the members had however attained a deep knowledge of the Bible though they knew little of the local church. Their departure made the leader feel completely humiliated and he got depressed; the same leader, the master and teacher of God’s things.

Simon emphasized that also great religious and political leaders have the same attitude of the leaders of religious sects; furthermore, in the same way they cannot and mustn’t be contradicted while in power. Hitler himself obtained his power by plagiarising German people who followed him because he used to say in a perfect style what they wanted to hear. Mankind abandons the truth for weakness, ignorance or comfort.

Zaderk’s way of thinking had now been shaped. As a member of the sect, he had undergone every possible kind of psychological and mental aggravation; the leader used to isolate all members by using shrewd psychological tricks; he put them up against each other, he created situations of mistrust and suspicion which in a case where the Bible is used and the members want to be reliable is terrible because of the continuous attacks coming from everywhere. You must answer carefully and kindly if you “don’t want to sin” but for the sect to sin is not divine law transgression but basically contradictory to the leader’s opinion of the moment. It is not easy to maintain your own integrity in a sect as leaders are generally psychos who change their frame of mind several times a day and each transformation leads to a drastic change of what is or not considered as “sinful”.

Zaderk agreed completely with Simon’s consideration that in limited environments where there isn’t the Spirit of God there are very similar situations to those that happen in sects, where one or more people become dictatorial and psychologically influence others. Zaderk also added that according to him it is not accidental that evil people always have one common characteristic since they have a common spirit and, anyway, have the same psychological and spiritual rebellion towards God’s laws. A psychological analysis of dictators and tyrannical charismatic leaders allows us to draw a basic outline of the Antichrist.

Though there is no guarantee that all characteristics are always consistently present, we can say that a leader with an wicked guiding spirit is generally mistrustful, keen to check everything and everyone, considers himself a philanthropist, money lover though indifferent, eager for power, superstitious, disregarding of everything and everyone in order to augment himself. These people look for admiration and compliance of those around them, are sexually corrupt, dressed by a light of faith as they are looking for some election “from the top”; they are paranoiacs, they want everything

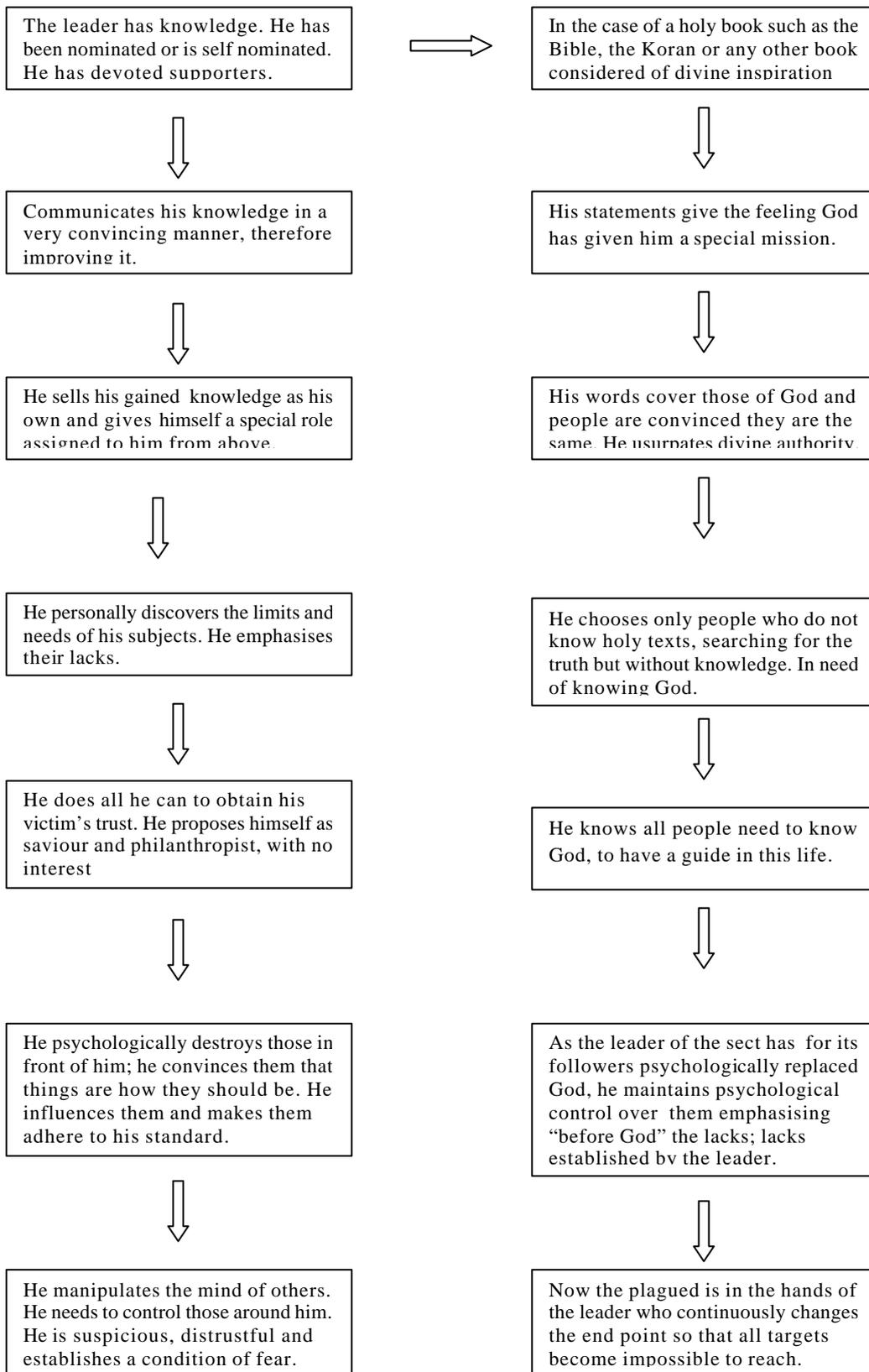
to roll around them, they love being encircled by people who support their game and if they have some sort of political power, they always organise a group of personal “favourites”. Generally we are talking about usurpers that use titles they do not have or have obtained either illegally or falsely as their only target is to appear; there is no substance, their enemies are those that go straight to the point. Simon confirmed that Polpot, Hitler, Stalin, Mao and Saddam Hussein all possess many of these characteristics and are also and will always be ferocious. The Antichrist is the greatest expression of satanic power but is perfectly identical to the model society is creating. He is charismatic, intelligent, handsome, maybe also a sex symbol, elegant, cunning, a great organiser, a sly corruptor who will buy many powerful men and seduce all those who continue to live in ignorance. He will be an implausible politician, acceptable by the UN, America, Europe, poor countries, respected and well thought of by the Catholic, Protestant, Orthodox, Islamic, Buddhist, Hindu world. He will be lay, understanding towards minorities but towards real Christians. Everyone will say: “at last the right man! Just what we needed!”. He will be able to guarantee peace, especially in the Middle East. He will carry out such a significant feat that will make many Israelis think of him as the Messiah. He will sign an agreement with Israel that will make the population say: “Peace and Security”. He will become leader of a political organisation with roots common to those of the Roman Empire; he will be supported by ten governments, three of these will be put aside directly by the Antichrist and maybe replaced. Zaderk fully agrees with Simon’s analysis and emphasises the fact that all the world’s religions will associate and support this political leader who will take advantage of this for only three and a half years; then he will want to be the only one to be worshipped and will let the ten-government organisation (maybe a G10 or ten European governments or a UN government body made by ten states mainly European) destroy and rob the world religious organisation: *“The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short time. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, who have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength to the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. And he saith to me, The waters which thou sawest, where the harlot sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the harlot, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. (this is when the political government will rob the religious power) For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman whom thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth. (Rome) (Rev. 17:8-18).*

Then the second period of three and a half years will begin, the second part of Tribulation known as the “Great Tribulation” characterised for the Jews “by the abomination of the desolation standing in the Holy Place”. This act - described by both Daniel the Prophet and Jesus - will be carried out in the Temple of Jerusalem (rebuilt and with its religious services restored) and will represent the breaking of the agreement and the beginning of the massacre of Jews and persecutions against Christians “as never seen before”.

The reign of the Antichrist will end with the arrival of Christ into Glory for freeing the remaining Jews beleaguered in Armageddon. The Messiah’s appearance as the expected liberator mentioned eight times more than for the first coming as the Messiah suffering for the people, a prophetic condition evaluated before the birth of Jesus that has mislead religious men of that time and made them crucify Jesus. Without knowing, the clergy of two-thousand years ago accomplished the

prophecies and long-established the Bible, the Word of God. Today the many elements of the world's society are, without knowing it, accomplishing in the same way the prophecies of the Bible.

The Spiritual and Mental Plague



JUST WHAT HAPPENS AT A MACRO LEVEL IN OUR CURRENT SOCIETY WITHOUT GOD,
WHERE MANKIND IS ALWAYS LOOKING FOR PERFECTION, TRYING TO REACH
CONTINUOUSLY MOVING TARGETS.

THE ROLE GIVEN TO THE BIBLE

The Bible is the book God gave to mankind therefore through its teachings, we could live on the earth and be guided to eternal life.

The centre of the Bible is Jesus Christ, the Messiah. Everything in the universe moves around Him:

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.” (John 1:1-5). *“And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.”* (John. 1:14).

He is the Creator, the confirmed Divine Intelligence, the Saviour: *“Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is no other name under heaven given among men, by which we must be saved.”* (Acts 4:12), perfect God and perfect man who experienced sufferance and death for love, to take upon Him the sins of mankind and enable mankind to be vindicated through faith *“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.”* (Rom 5:1) freeing mankind from the slavery. This means that we can live freely on the earth without the anguish of judgement and death as if we have believed we will immediately become citizens heaven *“For our citizenship is in heaven; from which also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our lowly body, that it may be fashioned like his glorious body, according to the working by which he is able even to subdue all things to himself.”* (Phil 3:20-21). Jesus is also the Liberator, the Almighty, the King of kings, the Lord of lords.

Therefore, if the centre of the Bible is Jesus no faith or philosophy that doesn't recognise Jesus as God made man can be valid *“Jesus saith to him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father?”* (John. 14:9). Jesus cannot be interpreted; you are either with or against Him *“He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.”* (Mat. 12:30). Christ cannot be at the same time God, God's descendant, a prophet, a philanthropist, philosopher, extraterrestrial who came to bring light to this world.

“Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.” (I John. 2:22). Therefore those who recognise Christ as the incarnation of God, truly recognise Him while those who recognise Him for any other thing is an enemy of truth and is not a Christian *“And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not from God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, of which ye have heard that it should come; and even now already it is in the world.”* (I John. 4:3).

The same way those who do not recognise the Bible as the Word of God deny the Bible that affirms to be “inspired by God”:

“All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished to all good works.” (II Tim 3:16-17) and *“We have also a more sure word of prophecy; to which ye do well that ye take heed, as to a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.”* (II Peter 1:19-21).

Those who do not recognise the Bible have no spiritually valid reference point and what's worse they do not have Christ saving them as deeds do not save but condemn: *“Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.”* (Rom. 4:4-5).

THE APPOINTMENT

Simon enters his office on the 56th floor of the south tower. He managed to be late even when he used to get up two hours before. On Sundays he always just managed to be on time for Sunday Service, but this morning unless something inconceivable happened there was no way he could be late for the 9 o'clock appointment with the Managing Director of Wireless & Cabling Corp..

8.20 – he enters the login screen of Windows 2000; he has to insert the last changes to the report he has worked on for the last few weeks. Time's running fast. 8:45 – everything is ready and printed out. Simon's not that worried; his computer is connected through intranet with the meeting room. Suddenly there is a colossal vibration and a loud roar. Simon can't understand what's happening, he jumps up and goes to look for some colleagues; nobody seems to understand what's really happened, people are shouting in the corridors that lead into the offices with their windows facing the north tower. Everybody runs to see what's happening. There's a lot of debris. The north tower is on fire possibly up on the 80th floor; a dense black smoke is coming out from the tower which is in flames. Some people say it was a hopper plane that crashed against the tower but the damage is too big for it to be a small plane; some say it was an attack. If so, the building has to be evacuated as soon as possible as foreseen by the new safety rules following the 1993 terrorist attack on the WTC. People who are trapped by the flames start jumping out of the windows; they look like rags. A woman continues crying: "they're jumping out of the windows! They're jumping out of the windows! It's an attack! Let's get away from the windows before any debris or someone else attacks us! Out! Let's get out of here! Oh my God, they're jumping out of the windows, oh my God, out of the windows, oh my God, they're jumping out of the windows!"

It's just after 9 and many decide to evacuate the south tower. Simon won't be able to get to his appointment. He decides to leave with his colleagues Chris and Alison but in that specific moment they are hit by an explosion followed by a terrifying roar; everything turns dark and full of smoke, the panels of the false ceiling start collapsing, numerous air, water and electrical pipes break up and fall all over the place. No-one in the group is able to understand if anyone is injured. Lots of stuff have fallen over them, tearing their clothes. You can hear cries, the emergency alarms and you can hardly see the yellow optical alarm; it's very hot, there's a lot of noise and you can't breathe; a piece of rag is soaked in the water all over the floor – it must be over an inch deep – to make a mask so one can protect him/herself from smoke and dust. They must find the emergency stairs but it's impossible to find your way around in these conditions; a steel bar falls over Chris's shoulder cutting off his right arm. Simon and Allison cannot see much but Chris's cries are horrifying; they can hear the blood oozing out like a broken tap, obscurity obscures the blood but it's absolutely terrifying to witness a friend dying in front of you, someone you were talking and joking with half an hour before, someone you had spent many great weekends at the tennis club playing and having lunch together and now in just a few minutes his life was flowing away, he couldn't prevent the blood coming out. Chris stopped answering to Simon and Allison's calls. They were lying on the floor next to him powerless to change things, to understand what was really happening, completely soaked and – what's worse – they had tried to stop the blood loss by holding him tight just like children do when their favourite toy get broken under the wheels of a car. They had reacted instinctively to something that had nothing to do with instinct. Chris, the great leader with a wonderful career, 32 years old, best Harvard student, always cheerful and simple in his brightness was slowly dying in a place which seemed more like hell than the temple of the world's finance; Chris had stopped lamenting. Simon asked Allison – she was a pretty girl in her thirties, with a typically British fair complexion, blue eyes, blondish hair, tall, nice looking, well educated, also an evangelist like Simon – whether she wanted to pray with him in those last moments of Chris's – and maybe their own – life. So in this catastrophic moment Simon sitting on the floor with Chris's back still warm over his chest and holding onto Allison's trembling hand started to pray: "I do not know what's happening my Lord nor why you have enabled the hand of our enemy to hit us so violently. Take care of Chris; I hope my experience has brought repentance and salvation into his heart so

that he can be granted eternal life after his spirit has blown over this world for only few years. I will miss his kind and serene smile until the day I die. Protect and comfort his family. I also wish to pray to you to protect me and Allison; if it is your wish we can find a way out of here”.

Fifteen minutes had passed since the explosion and the only outcome was Chris's death. Allison is speechless, she's holding on to Simon's hand tightly who finds the courage to lay Chris's body on the muddy floor. No other voices can be heard, only pieces of things crashing on the floor and computer screens blowing up.

Simon and Allison finally manage to get to the lifts which are evidently out of order but are at least a reference point. They open one of the fire-proof doors but close it immediately. A strong heat and black smoke comes from the stairway. There's no way out from here. Smoke and heat are getting worse, it's practically impossible to breathe, pieces of ceiling continue to fall over Simon and Allison who keep a hold on each other so as not to lose one another, they're soaked in blood probably from the cuts on their heads and arms and from their attempt to stop Chris from bleeding, their mouths furred with dust, saliva and blood. Finally they manage to get to the side opposite side of the building. The explosion has broken and shattered all the windows into bits; the strong wind gets rid of some of the smoke, just sufficient to breathe some decent air instead of the thick black smoke coming from everywhere.

Loud voices are approaching. The Firemen are coming up while everybody is trying to get down from the emergency stairs; they're yelling "left! Keep on the left!". The heroes of the Fire Department of New York (FDNY) are speedily climbing the stairs with 15 kilos of equipment over their shoulders to impede the flames. They're bringing people out to safety while they continue to climb up the stairs, towards the flames without thinking of the possibly risk of the tower collapsing at any moment. Allison cries out to Simon to follow her along the path which is indicated by the emergency lights that confirms to be the best choice. While they both two start descending, the Firemen continue going up, handing out masks while the air is always getting blacker and denser with smoke. Simon and Allison are among the last to get to the stairs; they try to get out as fast as they can, it takes them a few seconds per floor at the beginning then when they begin getting closer to "ground zero" the amount of people trying to escape increases. The fire is weakening the steel frame of the main structure of the tower: it's going to collapse.

There is no great panic. Everybody is behaving calmly and neatly following the rescuers instructions accurately. On some floors the line of people is at a standstill taking even up to two or three minutes which seem like an eternity. 10:05 – Simon and Allison are close to safety; only 8 floors to go when the tower begins to shudder in an incredible way, people cannot keep their grip onto the handrail, all the emergency lights go off, a loud roar takes hold of everything followed by an gigantic white cloud of debris falling from everywhere; the floor suddenly opens up swallowing Allison while Simon is thrown outside. His flight is interrupted when he is hit by a piece of the tower's external structure that hacks off his leg while a cave in of great big pieces of concrete and steel hit him over the head breaking his skull; his whole body is hit by the top part of the tower that provoked the rest of the tower to collapse and his body is no longer recognisable buried under the disintegrated skyscraper.

Simon's life ends at 10:05 of 11th September 2001 together with another 3000 victims of a terrorist act carried out in the name of god, a god made by men whose target is to destroy Israel and kill the infidels – "The Christians". But killing those who have eternal life is useless and destructive. A young life suddenly ends one day from the hands of men whose minds are obscured by hate and a tainted spirit whose hours are numbered.

But at the end Simon has only anticipated his meeting with the Lord, a reunion he couldn't have missed because his faith was true, alive and based upon the promise made to Christ for those who believe in eternal life:

“Verily, verily I say unto you, he that heareth My Word and believeth in Him that sent Me, hath everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed from death unto life.” (John. 5:24).

Simon had not watered down the Bible, he had not disputed its contents. He had enthusiastically captured its message and made it his own. You only need to argue a single word in the Bible to undo it completely. This wasn't Simon's approach towards the Scriptures. Simon died, he was killed by bloodthirsty assassins but in harmony with the Lord. Simon had been a real Christian, death was only a transitory phase for him before passing to another spiritual circumstance.

THE SEQUENCE OF EVENTS

In the beginning God created the angels and it is apparent that for some time there was a kind of society in which Satan, the rebel angel, had a very important role before his rebellion: he used to stamp perfection and was the guardian angel:

“Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyre, and say to him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thy heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thy iniquities, by the iniquity of thy merchandise; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more.” (Eze 28:12-19).

This text ends with the prophecy on the future of the Antichrist, the greatest perfection of satanic power on earth. This is the prophecy of Ezekiel which describes in few lines Satan's beginning, his rise, character, history and end. Certain psychological characteristics of Satan are described; they are what the present society calls “status symbols”. He is very rich, loves luxury, is handsome, he used emphasize the stamp of perfection as if this could make him similar to God; he loved arts, was a clever trader, a communicator very able of conveying trust as if he were a guardian, he transmits strength and power otherwise nobody would have him protect them. It is bizarre to observe that this psychological profile is comparable and similar to the human expressions of evil: dictators, mafia bosses, mob leaders, evil and tyrannical managers... We're all obsessed. We love power and money; we're able to offer protection; we're often susceptible towards music. In a certain way, we are full of charm but arrogant and futile. These characteristics are similar to the future leader of the world:

“And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries: but the people that know their God shall be strong, and do exploits. And they that understand among the people shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, many days. Now when they shall fall, they shall be helped with a little help: but many shall join with them with flatteries. And some of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white, even to the time of the end: because it is yet for a time appointed. And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvellous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that which is determined shall be done. Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all. But in his estate shall he honour the God of forces: and a god whom his fathers knew not shall he honour with gold, and silver, and with precious stones, and pleasant things. Thus shall he do in the strongest fortresses with a foreign god, whom he shall acknowledge and increase with glory: and he shall cause them to rule over many, and shall divide the land for gain. And at the time of the end shall the king of the south push at him: and the king of the north shall come against him like a whirlwind, with chariots, and with horsemen, and with many ships; and he shall enter into the countries, and shall overflow and pass through. He shall enter also into the glorious land, and

many countries shall be overthrown: but these shall escape out of his hand, even Edom, and Moab, and the chief of the children of Ammon. He shall stretch forth his hand also upon the countries: and the land of Egypt shall not escape. But he shall have power over the treasures of gold and of silver, and over all the precious things of Egypt: and the Libyans and the Cushites shall be at his steps. But tidings out of the east and out of the north shall trouble him: therefore he shall go forth with great fury to destroy, and utterly to sweep away many. And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.”(Dan. 11:32-45).

At a certain point Satan fell. He, an eternal being, the angel who rebelled because he considered himself like God. But he remained in the celestial position at the presence of God. After God decided to create mankind who was very similar in certain characteristics to its Creator. We are intelligent, capable of loving, of expressing feelings and with a spirit. Mankind has free will, is able to choose between good and evil, to search for its Creator and decide whether to follow Him or revolt following Satan's path. So mankind decided to follow its path independent from God, separated from its Creator and broke the spiritual communion that can only be re-conquered by recognising one's sin in Christ never through a path made of expiatory deeds.

Contradictory to fallen angels such as Satan doomed for eternity, mankind has always had – and still has now – the chance of repentance.

Adam and Eve sinned, they chose to rebel and spiritually died. That was when death was introduced into the human system; the cells begin to age this is a celestial plan to encourage men to reflect on God's existence and to look for Him what's more because our Creator stored into mankind the thought of eternity:

“He hath made every thing beautiful in his time. Also He hath also set in their hearts the thought of eternity, even though no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.” (Eccl. 3:11) and established we would live with the yearning to look for Him “that they may seek God; if indeed they might feel after him and find him, although he is not far from each one of us.”(Acts 17:27).

Though allowing our spiritual death, God has diluted physical death to give us more chances for repentance and salvation, contemplating the creation, evaluating life, reflecting on death and calling for Him.

The evidence is to recognise Him on earth following the principles He has established. Israel which was born as witness among the world's nations, is in the beginning faithful but often strays up to a point where it becomes futile, unable to recognise the Messiah as in the prophecy of Isaiah:

*“Who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of Jehovah been revealed? For he shall grow up before him as a tender sapling, and as a root out of dry ground: he hath no form nor lordliness, and when we see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and left alone of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief, and like one from whom men hide their faces; --despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely *he* hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; and we, we did regard him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way; and Jehovah hath laid upon him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, but he opened not his mouth; he was led as a lamb to the slaughter, and was as a sheep dumb before her shearers, and he opened not his mouth. He was taken from oppression and from judgment; and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgression of my people was he stricken. And men appointed his grave with the wicked, but he was with the rich in his death, because he had done no violence, neither was there guile in his mouth. Yet it pleased Jehovah to bruise him; he hath subjected him to suffering. When thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see a seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of Jehovah shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of*

*the fruit of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant instruct many in righteousness; and *he* shall bear their iniquities. Therefore will I assign him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong: because he hath poured out his soul unto death, and was reckoned with the transgressors; and he bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.”(Is 53).*

It is clear that we are talking about the Messiah who came to die for us but as He wasn't in addition a political liberator and the prophecies regarding His coming as political liberator are eight times more, He was not recognised as the Messiah and therefore executed.

The first Christians were all Jews. They were the ones who had the mission to witness the coming of God and His Plan for Salvation. Israel didn't know that it was “the woman who carried the baby in her womb” and the nation of Israel at the time of the Roman Empire was a spiritual “placenta” that stopped having a role of spiritual evidence; Judah's sceptre remained in the hands of Christ and the nation was annulled by Titus in 70 A.D.. Evidence develops through Christ's people who have the Holy Ghost in them, i.e. the Church.

In this day and age there are many religious movements and sects such as Jehovah's Witnesses which was established in the 19th century and who consider themselves God's witnesses using His ancient name. These are not witnesses; they are false witnesses who recommend only themselves. They are spiritually and psychologically very dangerous, they cannot be the witnesses of Christ because they deny the fact that Jesus is God as God's witnesses in the Old Testament were the children of Israel, people that still exist and that have been conserved by God as His Promise does not depend on mankind but on His faithfulness. God has presently taken away from Israel the witnessing and Israel's attitude will make it be hated by the entire world. But in the future witnessing will be returned to Israel during the seven year Tribulation:

“ Thus saith the Lord GOD: "Behold, I will lift up Mine hand to the Gentiles, and set up My standard to the people; and they shall bring thy sons in their arms, and thy daughters shall be carried upon their shoulders. And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers: They shall bow down to thee with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet. And thou shalt know that I am the LORD, for they shall not be ashamed that wait for Me." Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered? But thus saith the LORD: "Even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered; for I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, and I will save thy children. And I will feed them that oppress thee with their own flesh, and they shall be drunken with their own blood as with sweet wine. And all flesh shall know that I, the LORD, am thy Savior and thy Redeemer, the Mighty One of Jacob." (Is 49:22-26).

Israel will be God's witness once more when the Church is removed. In all this, Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons and many other so-called Christian organisations have no role as evidence, actually they generate confusion and damage just like all those religions that call themselves Christians but do not recognise Jesus as a God made man. Those who don't recognise Christ are not Christians; John says they have the Spirit of the Antichrist:

“When therefore He had risen from the dead, His disciples remembered that He had said this unto them. And they believed the Scripture and the Word which Jesus had said. Now when He was in Jerusalem at the Passover on the feast day, many believed in His name when they saw the miracles which He did.” (John. 2:22-23). “Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh, is of God. And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh, is not of God; and such is the spirit of Antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come, and even now already it is in the world.” (I John. 4:2-3).

Christian religions who do not recognise Jesus as God, deceased and resurrected for paying our price are spiritually dangerous, their doctrine is 90% true, many have changed the text of the Bible, e.g. Jehovah's Witnesses when John says:

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”(John. 1:1)

say "The Word was a God" while in Zechariah there is:

*"And I will pour upon the house of David and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem the Spirit of grace and of supplication; and they shall **look upon Me** whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for Him as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for Him as one who is in bitterness for his firstborn."*(Zec. 12:10)

and Jehovah's Witnesses have erased "upon me" completely varying the sense of the text. Mormons have the "Book of Mormon" which they call "another" testament of Jesus. In the book, the three witnesses say "Honour thy Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost who are one and only God". But they put the Book of Mormon and the Bible at the same rank, although many teachings are righteous and good, the Mormon and the Jehovah's Witnesses organisation put the power of their organisations at the same level as that of the Bible. But John states clearly *'For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book: If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book. And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the Book of Life and out of the Holy City, and from the things which are written in this book. He that testifieth these things saith, "Surely I come quickly." Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.'* (Rev. 22:18-20).

All religious organisations without God have all got one common feature: they give glory and authority to their organisations rather than to Christ as the living God.

Those who are religious for their convenience and are fakes do not have the Holy Ghost in them, they are antagonists of truth, prejudiced towards the real message of Christ's salvation, they are psychologically and spiritually and sometimes also physically violent, similar to the time of the crusades with the inquisition and holy wars.

God calls Satan an angel of light: *"For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel, for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works."*(II Cor. 11:13-15) and the Church is the light of the world: *"Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid."*(Mat. 5:14), therefore if we substitute the word light with Church we will have: "You shall not be surprised because Satan also dresses up as the angel of the Church".

It is clear from this that Satan creates devices to replace the Church with religious sects very similar to the Church that sidetrack us away from the truth in order to revoke Evidence.

The Head of the Church is Christ not the Pope, Mary, Padre Pio, the Head of the Jehovah's Witnesses or of the Mormons. The power for determining the truth according to Christ is the Bible, the Word of God. No other human organisation whatever its size can substitute or give it an univocal interpretation. The head of the Church is not a man; it is Christ.

But let's go back to the origin of events. Man was created similar to God, free to choose and in this freedom he decided to follow his righteousness putting it before that of God.

The evolution of a wrong system produced a corrupt society full of violence with very few exceptions. At this point God decided to eradicate the human race with the Floods; He only saved Noah and his family, eight people in total. God eradicated all mankind in 40 days because of its wickedness. But the appearance of the Rainbow established the new harmony with mankind. All nations of the world originated from the Noah's three children: Shem, Cam and Japheth. Shem created the Jews, Palestinians, Jordanians and Assizes; Cam created Babylonians and Libyans; Japheth created the Greek and Europeans.

The most superior civilisations developed at first in the so-called "fertile half-moon", i.e. the area that goes from Nineveh in the North of the Tigris up to the mouth of the Tigris and the Euphrates, then from Nineveh along the southern coast of Turkey, Syria, Lebanon, Israel up to Egypt. The first great civilisations were created by the Canaanites or Phoenicians, Egypt, the Chaldeans, the Greeks

(Yavan) and the first Chinese dynasties began with Fohi regarded as a divine being, the Chinese Noah.

King Nemrod, the founder of Nineveh, supporter of Isis, the female God holding a child in her arms, known as Athena by the Greeks and Minerva by the Romans, emerged into the Christian religion in the image of Mary with baby Jesus in her arms; King Nemrod is the founder of idolization still present these days through magic and astrology, initially an elite of the Powerful ones. At that time the Holy Ghost did not exist in mankind but each time depending on the situation, It communicated with mankind.

At a certain point God decided to begin the final phase of this present age and the hands of the prophetic watch of the Plan of God began to advance.

Now, though it isn't simple, let's put ourselves in God's shoes. His intent was to patch up the mistakes made by mankind the outcome of which is eternal separation from God, actual death. He must respect mankind's free will though at the same time He must make us understand that He is the Creator, He really exists and has a specific Plan based upon precise principles.

How could He go to any woman on earth and say: you are blessed among all women; you shall be the mother of the world's saviour. Who would have believed Him? How could He explain concepts and truths that are now unknown to the human mind?

Actually God decided to continue serenely in a clear and determined way by creating Himself evidence: He finds Abraham, a man willing to listen to Him. He teaches Abraham to follow Him within a relationship that widens in time, made of messages and silences, regular confirmations and pilgrimages that is proof of Abraham's faith in the Plan of God.

God spoke to Abraham; He gave him clear and accurate signs up to a point that though the interval between the promise and the achievement was long (the achievement of many promises wasn't even seen by Abraham) Abraham was a firm believer, his faith was strong.

Abraham's mind was incessantly headed towards God and His promises like in a perfect love. There was no Bible at the time; there was no written Word of God; there was no evidence for comforting or confirming. The promise and invitation made to Abraham were short and clear. 'Now the LORD had said unto Abram, "Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will show thee. And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing. And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee; and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.'" (Gen. 12:1-3). Abraham demonstrated his faith in God through his behaviour. He moved, acted, left the place where he was for an uncertain destination established by God.

Abraham began his journey. There was a moment of doubt in his family regarding the son that should have started his legacy but his wife forced the hand of God and gave her explanation of the promise of a son. Since Sarah, his wife, was barren she took her servant Agar and offered her to her husband so that he could have a son. Ishmael (God listened), the founder of Palestinians, was then born. The prophecy of God regarding Ishmael is still clear and valid for the Palestinian people: And the angel of eternity told her once more: *"And the angel of the LORD said unto her, "Behold, thou art with child, and shalt bear a son and shalt call his name Ishmael that is, God shall hear, because the LORD hath heard thy affliction. And he will be a wild man. His hand will be against every man, and every man's hand against him; and he shall dwell in the presence of all his brethren." (Gen. 16:11/12) and "And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee. Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful and will multiply him exceedingly. Twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation." (Gen. 17:20) and also "And it came to pass, when God caused me to wander from my father's house, that I said unto her, 'This is thy kindness which thou shalt show unto me: at every place whither we shall come, say of me, "He is my brother." 'for the LORD had closed up fast all the wombs of the house of Abimelech because of Sarah, Abraham's wife." (Gen. 21:13+18)". All this happened when Abraham was 86 years old but God did not argue about the agreement He had made with Abraham.*

Isaac was born when Abraham was 100 years old and he also followed the example of his father. The proof of this living God remained within the family setting (even if God had relationships also with other men out of Abraham's circle such as Job). The period is around 2100 B.C.. It is from Jacob, the son of Isaac, renamed Israel, that the legacy started to become a population. Also the promise made to Jacob was clear: *"And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad to the west and to the east, and to the north and to the south; and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed."*(Gen. 28:14). Jacob had twelve children from whom the twelve tribes of Israel originated; the Messiah had to come from one of these tribes, the tribe of Judah: *"The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet until Shiloh come; and unto Him shall the gathering of the people be."* (Gen. 49:10). These descendants went to Egypt where they became a big population and stayed there for 400 years during which they bred remaining loyal to the teaching of their fathers without any Holy Scripture or Law. In 1146 B.C. Moses took all the people of Israel out of Egypt, over 600,000 men plus women and children and joined a crowd of people and received the tables of the Law *"And the children of Israel journeyed from Rameses to Succoth, about six hundred thousand on foot who were men, besides children."* (Ex 12:37). Israel wandered around the desert for forty years owing to lack of faith. In this period Israel was taught how to develop the nation of Israel. God with the creation of the nation of Israel starts getting Himself known and, at the same time, creates the base so that the arrival of the Messiah is understood. Basically, God's attitude is always the same; He looks for active people who adore Him in His spirit and truth. Moses is the man who first learns to know God and after becomes the person who leads Israel to the Promised Land.

When Moses died, Joshua brought Israel to the promised land by conquering Jericho and taking all the land God had promised to Abraham 700 years before. The State of Israel was then born. I want to stop for a moment on the promise God made to Jacob to recognise for us Christians the accomplishment also in these present days of the Word: "our family is now blessed in Jesus Christ". The red thread that leads to our personal salvation and to that of all mankind through Christ begins with Abraham. Every action God makes towards mankind has its peak, description and reason to be in Christ.

Once he established himself, Israel subdivided the lands depending on the tribes and remained ruled by the "Judges" until the first king was named: Saul of the Tribe of Benjamin. But Saul didn't act well with God and so David of the Tribe of Judah - a king indicated by the Prophet Samuel - followed him; David's son, Salomon succeeded and built the Temple of Jerusalem. The united kingdom of Israel begins with Salomon. The country is divided in two: the Leviticus Priests follow Judah while all the other tribes but a part of Benjamin and Simeon's tribes remain faithful to Judah separate and create the reign of Israel of the North of Jerusalem. Up to the Assyrian deportation (722 B.C.) no king follows the teaching of the Bible while in the reign of the South called of Judah, the kings - at least sporadically - followed the divine teaching. With the Assyrian deportation, the people of the North of Israel were disseminated and from there the "Samaritans" originated. As the Messiah had to descend from the reign of Judah, this continued to be preserved by God and maintained its identity until the coming of Jesus Christ. The Prophecy says the Messiah is a descendent of Judah, the child of Isai, therefore a descendant of David: *"And the LORD said unto Samuel, "How long wilt thou mourn for Saul, seeing I have rejected him from reigning over Israel? Fill thine horn with oil, and go. I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite, for I have provided Me a king among his sons.""*(I Sam. 16:1). *"And there shall come forth a Rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots. And the Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him--the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD-- and shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD; and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears. But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; and He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the*

wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His inmost being.”(Isa 11:1/5).

Judah is also deported (605 B.C.) by Babylonians under Nabucodonosor for 70 years: *“For thus saith the LORD: That after seventy years are accomplished at Babylon, I will visit you and perform My good word toward you, causing you to return to this place.”(Jer. 29:10)”, “ in the first year of his reign I, Daniel, came to understand by books the number of the years, according to the word of the LORD as it came to Jeremiah the prophet, that He would spend seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.”(Dan. 9:2).* During these 70 years there is the rise of Daniel the Prophet who is the instrument God uses to reveal some prophecies that enable us to understand the succession of events concerning the Nations of the earth starting from the time of Nabucodonosor up to the coming of Christ skipping the age of grace that goes from the Diaspora to the last seven years of our time with many facts especially during the time dominated by the Antichrist.

This last aspect is completed and studied profoundly by John in the book of Revelation.

The Prophets are the instrument used by God to inform mankind on the phases of His Plan. In the Bible there are the so-called major Prophets that are four, Isaiah (739-685 B.C.), Jeremiah, Ezekiel and Daniel; the latter live in the period around the expulsion of Judah to Babylon (627-536 B.C.). the minor Prophets cover the period from 830 B.C. to 488 B.C.. It must be said that during the Assyrian deportation there were many very important Prophets such as Isaiah, Micah and Hosea while Jeremiah, Zechariah and Daniel worked during the Babylonian deportation. It looks as if God had wanted to be particularly meticulous in explaining the events through the Prophets and at the same time to comfort Israelites by confirming to them that He has the situation under control. Today the same goes for us Christians. While everybody is shocked and uncertain about the future, bombarded and surrounded by news about massacres, wars, earthquakes, sexual abuse, diseases, thefts and so on, the knowledge we obtain through the Bible makes us both confident for this time in which we are biologically alive and for the future when will have an essentially spiritual life.

All Prophets have included in their books some forewarnings and teachings for the people, short and long term prophecies such as those about the coming of the Messiah as a saviour (Isaiah 53) or as a Lion, Israel’s liberator that will establish His reign on the earth (Isaiah 25).

Prophecies have often a double meaning. The same prophecy is applicable to the present as well as to the future such as in Daniel 11 where the prophecy on Antiochus Epiphan is applicable also for the Antichrist. We can say that through Isaiah, God gives a great spiritual shudder that continues then with the deportation to Babylon.

With the deportation of Judah to Babylon, the temple of Salomon and the walls of Jerusalem are destroyed, the spiritual indifference and false security of Judah’s people are devastated by God Himself who uses Nabucodonosor as choice. The same will happen to the generation that will be devastated by the shattering work of the Antichrist but thanks to God I will not live this experience as I will either die before or be among the main characters in the Rapture of the Church together with all Christians of all ages and, maybe, the children *“then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so shall we ever be with the Lord.”* (I Thes. 4:17).

THE SCAR WILL ALWAYS BE THERE

A Christian should face this reality and evaluate his position without using snug excuses, compromises or pretexts.

The question is: if Jesus is the living god, if the Plan He has set up for the world's Nations is real, if He is alive today, if the duty of a Christian is to expand His Plan for Salvation, are we acting in the right way?

In the Christian world there is a basic problem: the members of the Church do not know God's Plan in detail, do not know the prophecies, do not ever ask themselves: "and if Jesus came back in this moment would He appreciate what I am doing?". Christians do not explore the Bible with the right zeal, they do not give to the Holy Ghost the spiritual material on which He can work on, useful for changing our way of thinking and acting.

Sterile Christians that do not bring any earning; "transgenic" Christians that have assimilated and accepted things from many different sources are worse than those who do not believe; because the way non-believers act is evidence that the Bible is right; their failures, emptiness, running after power and material goods - as if they were running after the wind - or vanity, confirm the message of the Bible is true because a man without God is never full or satisfied.

But faithless Christians that do not work or know, have no zeal, are dogmatic, bigoted and strict in their rituals, cause damage and stop the Gospel from improving, make those who would like to get close to God - whether or not realising it - through Christ or the Bible run away.

The evening of 11th September, Zaderk received a phone call from Simon's mother who was very worried and distressed as she was almost certain "her baby" had died trapped in the south tower where he used to work. She burst out crying and moaning as if Zaderk had the magic spell to comfort her; she said she had been to all hospitals while the other brothers were phoning around to try and get some definite news. She had printed out several sheets from the computer with Simon's photo and the necessary information for contacting the family. Simon's wife, heart broken, had also been around the main points of the city and put up photos on walls, lampposts and phone boxes of her young husband Simon who had almost certainly been killed in the attack made by Islamic terrorists.

Zaderk tried to comfort Simon's mother reminding her his life was in the hands of God who had the situation under control, that Christians are strangers in a foreign land where evilness is the only law and, however, knowing the Plan of God can bring comfort and peace, real peace. Zaderk said he would pray for his brother of faith and best friend Simon and all his family in this tragic moment for the entire world. Goodbye and the call was over.

Zaderk is quiet, his heart seems suddenly emptied, his thoughts replicate the sequences seen several times on TV showing the planes hitting the towers which burst into flames and make immense columns of smoke rise up in the air; he imagines his friend trapped in flames and suffocating by the smoke, his wife and children. What can we tell the children? How will they understand? How can we explain that some men decided to kill their father in the name of a God called Allah? For those terrorists their daddy was an "infidel" and, therefore, had to be killed. No, they will no longer roll over with him on the lawn of their garden because they are Americans, Christians, they have no right to live in this world. All this because of a stupid law written by stupid people and put into practice by stupid but dangerous people.

Simon youngest child, Elizabeth, used to love listening to her father and loved him very much. Once she told him she didn't want to grow up so that her daddy, mummy and granny would not die if she didn't grow then they wouldn't age.

Simon had invented some tales for his five year old daughter Elizabeth and used to tell her them every night. The tales were basically stories of the Bible: "the Statue of Nabucodonosor", "the Stories of Noah, Moses or Joseph, the latter two renamed the story of the "Bad pharaoh" and of the "Good pharaoh". Simon often improvised changing the story but was quickly reprimanded by his daughter to repeat the original "version". Correctly.

Simon took care of creating in Elizabeth's mind the sense of continuity of life, giving her the essentials that enable one to understand that God exists, can be reached, must be respected and that in the world there are the signs to understand how His pre-established plan is proceeding.

When the little girl asked questions on life existence Simon explained to her that men and women have a spirit that brings life to the body; this body is rented to us, the spirit is not. The body will inevitably wear out, exhaust and die. But the spirit of a person does not get older, doesn't wear out, may lose control of the body but opposite to his vital "Host" it is substantially perfect; it may interrupt communications with other people but the soul of men doesn't lose its nature and personal identity. In this way one can better understand why Jesus could have only been God and no one else. On this matter, a translation of the Bible (New American Version + Greek text) says: "Christ Jesus, that is keeping to be something that has always been, in his form (Form = Morphè: something that exists only in the universe regardless whether it can be seen or not) 'Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God'" (Fil. 2:5-6). So it is clear that what really counts in life is the spirit and the one that was in the body of Mary's son, Jesus the Lord, was that of God. Each human being is a different spirit living in a human body regardless if it is a baby living only one day or a man dying after 100 years. This is why if someone is able to understand this reality in depth, the mentally disabled, physical or senile handicapped are for the divine view the same as the so-called "normal" people as their spiritual part is not handicapped, their problem is only in the body as this is the "material tool" for life on earth. God has a very clear opinion on having "personal concerns" "If ye fulfill the royal law according to the Scripture, 'Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself,' ye do well. But if ye have respect of persons, ye commit sin and are convicted by the law as transgressors." (Jas 2:8-9) "And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear. For ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, such as silver and gold, from your vain way of living which ye received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot." (I Peter 1:17-19).

All things are apparently difficult to understand for a little girl but surprisingly natural. In this way, the little girl subconsciously builds up the foundations of human existence.

On the other hand, the evaluation of time for mankind changes during one's life. One year represented 20% of her existence just like 8 years for a forty-year old man. This is why when one grows we feel time passes more rapidly and reduces itself. Human beings wonder about death already in their early years as soon as we realise our own existence and have to face the death of a loved one – person or animal. If the problem of death is not solved with a real answer this is suffocated but then it frequently rises up again throughout one's life. But the essential part of mankind is its spirit and the spirit never dies: "I know that whatsoever God doeth, it shall be for ever; nothing can be added to it, nor anything taken from it. And God doeth it, that men should fear before Him." (Eccl. 3:14)

Now after the attack on the towers what is going to happen? Thousands of children will become orphans, thousands of families will cry and ask for revenge and the destruction of other innocents in another part of the world. This is Satan's pleasure; few deaths at last. The prince of death now celebrates as many will kill each other, good-thinkers will despise all religions, fanatics and Integralists, they will not be willing to listen that God exists, that He is a God of love; all this because a few crazy people kill in His name. We are losing common sense, we are no longer capable of analysing God's things. However, this is a great result for Satan, another brick in the building of feelings that will lead to the making of the "world's religion" that will then open the way to the coming of the Antichrist and that will then be destroyed three and a half years later before the battle of Armageddon as in this period the governor of the world will expect to be adored. Therefore, a religious organisation such as the world religion will be an obstacle for such project.

The western world will have little trust in the Islamic world and will hate it while, on the other hand, Islam will close itself and hate Christians; exactly the same thing happens during the Roman

derby football match, Roma integralists hate Lazio integralist and vice-versa. Religion is now reduced to rituals, conflicting groups that at the same time have the same attitude and beliefs. There is little space for the basic element of the relationship with God that is intimate, personal and based on precise rules, that can be carried out only through faith in the blood of Jesus who makes it possible for us to get close to Him.

Simon was a valid witness of the Church in this world. However, the work of a believer is forever, it leaves eternal traces that continue also after death. According to Jesus, a Christian is the light of the world, a lamp that brings light where there is darkness. But the strength and determination of a Christian can only come out from a deep knowledge of the prophecies because only by realising how close the return of Christ is encourages us every day to act coherently with the message of the Bible. Zaderk still remembers Simon's determination in stating the truth and justice in acting towards others in the same way. An episode of Zaderk's life in his relationship with Simon is significant of how Zaderk has been influenced by Simon's example.

Before going to London Zaderk had done his military service in the Paratroopers, actually – very weird – in the 15th company named “black devils” of the 5th El Alamein Battalion. He was sub-lieutenant and every morning had to shout “devils” and the rest of the group replied “Folgore” (name of the Italian paratroopers).

During his military service - as many others - he stole a certain amount of smoke bombs, machine gun belts - some with blanks, some with real bullets - some 9 calibre bullets and even a 12.7 calibre taken as a souvenir from a Browning machine gun. This was rather dangerous since the period of the Red Brigades in 1981, if you were found with such things, you would go to prison for several years. However, Zaderk hid all that stuff in his cellar, then forgot about it and went to London to learn English; initially it had to be only for three months but then he stayed there for five years. One day after he had come back home – a beautiful Saturday of April - while he was tidying up his cellar he found all that ammunition and without any second thought he put everything in a plastic shopping bag and took it to his local Carabinieri Station in Tufello (area of Rome). It was 1986. Zaderk simply went in and asked for the Captain but they told him he was busy so they made him speak to a marshal. Zaderk insisted on speaking to the Captain but there was no way anyone was going to tell the captain that Zaderk wanted to speak to him. At that point Zaderk emptied all the ammunition on the table, the MG machinegun belts and smoke bombs and said:” I'm a retired paratroops lieutenant. During my military service I stole this stuff so I committed a crime against my State and I'm here to set things back.” The marshal remained speechless for a few seconds then called the lance-corporal and said:” one moment please, I've got to call the Captain!” The Captain came down and was astonished to see the marshal's table full of ammunition. He stopped to think for a moment and then said:” regrettably we'll have to report you to the Public Prosecutor's Office and I'll have to search your house”. Zaderk's froze. He had not thought about the consequences that a house search would cause with his mother because she didn't know anything about all this. Zaderk explained to the Captain the reason behind this decision, that basically now his life had changed, that his acts were now made not only before people but also before God. The explanation caused sympathy from the officer and his colleagues but the law had to be respected. So Zaderk was escorted home. It wasn't easy to explain to his mother what was happening. However, the Captain understood the situation and carried out all formalities very quickly without disturbing the family atmosphere; he also acknowledged that while he was in the academy confiscating cartridges and bullets was quite a common thing.

Zaderk was worried. He spoke to Simon on the phone and described the episode and his reasons. Simon answered that maybe Zaderk's behaviour had been rather reckless and emotional. Zaderk said one of the carabinieri had kindly told him:” why didn't you throw them in the trash or take them back to Siena to one of your colleagues in the El Alamein Battalion?”. However, Simon comforted his friend and said:” you acted before God, the living God; you gave evidence of what happened in your heart and in your life. Don't worry. This choice of yours will be used by Him in His glory and He'll get you out of it!”.

The process followed its course with the military prosecutor's office of La Spezia as the Folgore Brigade reports there. The military attorney of Rome called Zaderk, so he went into his office together with his lawyer appointed by the court. As soon as they sat down the lawyer told the Judge in a considerate way: "look he's a good boy!". The Judge replied immediately: "if he were a good boy he wouldn't be here!" This answer made Zaderk a little nervous so he began to answer the Judge's questions who had not understood that the ammunition had been returned spontaneously by the former officer. The Magistrate listened carefully to Zaderk's Christian Witnessing and particularly appreciated his straightforwardness and loyalty and at the end stood up to shake Zaderk's hand and said: "there should be more young people like you!" It all ended in June when the President of the Republic Cossiga granted a pardon also for Zaderk's crime of when he had been an officer in the paratroopers – continuous multiple grand larceny. Zaderk's military career was over but maybe some people that Zaderk has never seen since receiving a strong Christian evidence and reflecting on God's role in one's intimacy and who knows how many Zaderk will meet again in the sky when he dies? In that case he will have one more reason to rejoice before the Lord!

Zaderk also wrote a touching text published on the web at www.redwood.it/silent/kerosene.htm , dedicated to a young boy of his group who died after his jump on 5th March 1981:

SMELL OF KEROSENE

He was there, in front of me, with the air of someone who wanted to interrogate me. A meter of height, two big black eyes that squirted astuteness.

One chilly morning close to the end of the winter, the sky was blue, marvelous, few people walked in the park. Sitting on the bench with, my head lowered, I held tightly the red Basque in my hands. I was still wearing the jumping suite and the insignias of the airborne battalion. The boy took a deep breath to gain courage and with an insecure voice he asked me: "Why are you crying? A true soldier never cries!" Without waiting for my answer, he turned around and ran away.

The hill of the park overlooked the beautiful countryside; the sun was bright and warm, announcing the arrival of spring.

The propellers of the helicopter push the air violently over the grass in the countryside of Siena, the smell of kerosene is strong and pleasant; sitting with my parachute, I wait for my turn to embark on the helicopter CH47 Chinook. It's my fourth jump, the first with the Brigade. I am an officer of the Italian Army, the Folgore Brigade: I must be a tough man! I'm here to prove to myself that I can overcome fear. I must prove that I can face death, but my heart is like a piece of butter out in the sun, slowly melting away.

Today could well be my last day on this planet, my precious last moments, yet I don't notice any difference with the previous days. Today could be my turn to die. What sooner or later everyone has to face, could happen today. What a funeral I could have! Very important! All the soldiers in line, a solemn speech from the General of the Brigade, a lot of emotion! Everyone would say nice things about me after I'm dead; they would say that I was a good guy, very honest. You know, when you die, people turn you into a saint!

Twenty years seem like a day. What will happen to all my anxiety, to my exhibitionism, to the disappointment of not conquering that girl , or earning a lot of money? What will be of the plans for my future? What will be of all those things that I desperately wanted and made me so miserable? I

realize that I'm not in a hurry to leave this world, no matter how many days I have lived so far: today is too soon!

Life is strange! You appreciate it only when you know how easy it is to lose it! When you have a few minutes left to the end, all your anxieties become very small. I realize that the world would be a better place if everyone lived in the awareness of the precariousness of their existence. But there is no more time to explain my thoughts. The big helicopter with two propellers softly leans over the grass, a few meters from us; the turbines are making such a deafening noise that I have to shout to speak to my colleagues.

The air has a particular odor, it's fizzy, in my mouth I feel a strange taste, it's the adrenaline in the blood. I am at the head of the line, the first of the first passage, I take place on the closest seat to the hatch. All the paratroopers are passing in front of me, taking each one its place, young people with serious expressions, silent faces, Italian faces.

The military jump is different from the others; It takes place at a very low altitude: eleven hundred feet, not even four hundred meters. In case of a malfunction of the parachute it's almost impossible to open the emergency, especially on the first jumps. It's even harder with the rucksack and the rifle. Inside the helicopter there is a feeling of strength, that transmits power, the power that derives from the recklessness of challenging death.

Death

The biggest and most powerful adversary of man! To challenge death gives you the feeling of being as powerful as she is. But, at the end of the day, in reality she is the one that decides how and when. The turbines are revving up, the helicopter lifts up first in the back and then in the front; when you take off it's impossible to speak because the noise is so intense. The hatch leaves an open space from which you can see the hills of the Chianti; the burnt kerosene fogs up the air.

I realize that we have reached the jumping altitude when the helicopter slows down, it settles, proceeding at a constant speed.

The jump officer is in front of me, one meter from the void. He motions to us that it's time to get up. The hatch is lowered slowly, on the sides of the fuselage the lights are redheads; One hand holds on to the rope hooked to the steel cable, the other looks for a grip on the side of the helicopter.

The jump officer now is crouched on the side, he's holding on to my jumping suit; we move a lot, in the headphones he receives the message that we are six seconds from the jump. Half a meter from the exit, emotions are very high. My eyes are staring at the red lights, few instants, then the green light comes on, a slap on the thigh, the jump towards the void.

The head is low, the legs tight and tense. An immediate and total silence: thousand-one, thousand-two, thousand-three, thousand-four, thousand-five; I look to the right, look to the left. I tell myself that everything is all right but, I'm going fast, too fast. I don't understand why.

Terror attacks me, my head starts pinching, the speed increases vertiginously; I don't want to lift up my head to see what's happening. I understand that I must open the emergency, but my hands don't answer to the orders of the brain. Panic is the master in this situation.

Death, the ultimate enemy, is winning the game.

Fifteen seconds, that's how much is left before the end. Last instants to contemplate my existence. In front of my eyes, as in a parallel reality the landscape seems firm to testify the beauty of creation, sharp contrast with human reality full of hate, of useless and scanty struggles, rich of miserable, sad people.

Thoughts running through my head like bullets. I think of family and friends. I realize that for me

it's finished, yes: for me the end is now.

What good have I done on this earth? What will they write on my headstone? What sign will remain of what little water I've poured over the ground? When the sun dries it up, who will remember it? Soon I will smash on the field, a violent impact, never experienced before, my God help me! I beg you to listen to me! Forgive me if I think of you only when terror attacks me! Now I will crash to the ground! Why is this happening to me? Please God save me!

Few seconds have passed, but seem like eternity for the dying, a second is worth a whole life.

I see the trees and the meadow getting closer and closer and I can do nothing else but try to grab the emergency over my stomach.

Finally I grab it, hold on to it tightly with my right hand and with all the strength that I have, I pull it. In a flash, the spring flies off and the parachute blows up. In just a few instants I land violently but without damages. I'm still breathing. I don't believe my eyes, I'm still alive.

Thank you God! Thank you earth for existing! Thank you life for allowing me to taste the ultimate essence! Thank you death for sparing me this time! I know that one day I will meet you, but for now I'm not in a hurry!

And once again, I thank God, because now I can look at death straight in the face without fear, knowing that my existence is forever with him.

Knowing God, allowing Jesus to enter in my everyday life has enabled me to face life in a simple way and with a linear approach, with an underlining serenity which belongs to a child of God.

Death is the weapon, it's the most powerful blackmail that our adversary Satan, uses against men.

But Christ's salvation has allowed me to overcome this obstacle. The awareness that my spirit, my essence, I, as a person, will spend the whole eternity with God, and the deep certainty of knowing that God is always with me, gives me the strength and a sense of beatitude that nothing in the world can give me.

When I used to jump with the parachute I didn't know God, and I am thankful that He allowed the parachute to open every time, to turn my life around before it was too late.

But often I'm sad because I live among people that don't realize that their parachute could not open one day and therefore don't make the change in their life, the choice of faith in Christ, who can save them and give them the right to eternal life.

(The Silent Friend – Giulio Credazzi © 1998 www.redwood.it/silent)

Zaderk had joined the Folgore – Italian paratroops – to prove to himself and others he was not a coward as he had been accused of by people from the right wing environment because he had always refused to take part in disciplinary missions, retaliations or any sort of violent demonstrations. His refusal had caused him much confusion and a great insecurity as he basically was not part of the group “in full”. All right, when he was in a disco he could show off together with the other bullies, engrossing their toughness and trying to make it become his own but it was all basically fake. Zaderk wasn't a violent guy; he did not love violence and actually most of the “communist” targets of Montesacro were friends of his with whom he had grown up together and politics wasn't a valid reason to hate them and wish to kick their heads in.

So Zaderk applied for the Paratroopers. In this way he hit two birds with one stone as he acquired respect in his group as Paratroopers are well considered and appreciated in the right wing environment and on the other hand, he had the chance to try and find himself, address and coordinate his feelings of challenge towards a direction that was clear, tangible, measurable and in a certain way much more controlled, protected and safeguarded in the army than during his life in Rome at the end of the 70s.

Another source of inspiration for joining the paratroopers was his uncle Max who had fought in the foreign legion during the second world war. Uncle Max had fascinated Zaderk with his stories and among all the presents he gave him, the most appreciated one was a French book on the history of paratroopers covered with the camouflage material of a parachute with a French patent. Zaderk had read the story over and over of “Dien Bien Phu” in Vietnam; he had also thought to become a mercenary in Africa – easier said than done. Uncle Max had told him about a time in Brussels when he worked enrolling mercenaries and when some clean faced boy used to turn up. He made them sit down and look at a great big photo album full of dead bodies, heads and limbs cut off and hanged people. He then said that the opposition had no compassion for mercenaries who are paid for fighting against someone maybe fighting for his own home.

An important moment in his military career was the earthquake in Irpinia. The Sunday of the earthquake was a day to remember for Zaderk and Giorgio – his roommate and colleague officer. They were all going back to Siena, Zaderk and Giorgio on the Fiat 127 belonging to the former, the other Giorgio in his Renault 5 on an empty road with some fogbanks; suddenly the Renault in front of them went onto the other side of the road. A cold shiver run down the spine of the two in the 127; they stopped on the hard shoulder, rolled down their windows and turned off the engine waiting for the bang of the inevitable crash. They remained still for few minutes without hearing any noise and then decided to move on. After a few kilometres they reached the other Giorgio who was safe, his eyes staring, probably terrorised as he confessed once they returned to the barracks. The night they got to the barracks a possible intervention in Irpinia was mentioned but information was vague and incomplete; it was not possible to understand the exact damage nor where exactly intervention was needed. Zaderk stayed waiting for orders for at least two days until he was sent with the Captain of the 13th company to Frigento in the province of Avellino on a Chinouk helicopter. The trip was terrible and probably, due to the bad weather, it would have taken less by truck. Zaderk was probably the only one not to throw up while the helicopter caught the turbulences of the helicopters before it and swung around like a rollercoaster; the flight was made very low to avoid the rainfull clouds.

Zaderk landed in Frigento at night near a school that collapsed a few months later. They spent the night there with their sleeping bags laid on the floor. The episode in which the Captain made a very pompous speech on the courage and strength of paratroopers who must always demonstrate their courage and firmness was rather funny if not tragic. While everybody was trying to fall asleep to recuperate for the next day there was an incredible tremor that made everyone fly up in the air. All the company was out in a flash, some from the main door, some from the windows. It's strange how circumstances change people's attitude; when they got back in, many found it more comfortable to sleep in the empty coffins that had been left inside the school.

Zaderk didn't know that earthquakes are a sign of the times as stated by Jesus (see Matthew 24). At the time he didn't have any knowledge of the prophecies of the Bible, actually he used to blaspheme quite a lot as many of the other fellow soldiers. He didn't even know that wars were a sign of the times. As a matter of fact he and his colleagues didn't reconfirm themselves because they said that in 1981 there was no place for another war and so it made no sense to carry on in the army; at the most they could organise themselves and go to Chad or some other African country as mercenaries. Zaderk couldn't even imagine there were some prophecies in the Bible that talked about the history of mankind from Babylon to the time after the present one named age of grace.

THE DREAM OF THE STATUE OF NABUCODONOSOR

605 B.C. - Daniel is a young Jew that has been deported to Babylon together with Judah's people as mentioned several times by Isaiah: "*Behold, the days come that all that is in thine house, and that which thy fathers have laid up in store until this day, shall be carried to Babylon. Nothing shall be left,' saith the LORD. And of thy sons who shall issue from thee, whom thou shalt beget, they shall take away; and they shall be eunuchs in the palace of the king of Babylon.*" (Isaiah 39:6-7) and by Jeremiah: "*For thus saith the LORD: `Behold, I will make thee a terror to thyself and to all thy friends; and they shall fall by the sword of their enemies, and thine eyes shall behold it; and I will give all Judah into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall carry them captive into Babylon and shall slay them with the sword. Moreover I will deliver all the strength of this city and all the labors thereof, and all the precious things thereof, and all the treasures of the kings of Judah will I give into the hand of their enemies, who shall despoil them and take them and carry them to Babylon. And thou, Pashhur, and all that dwell in thine house shall go into captivity; and thou shalt come to Babylon, and there thou shalt die and shalt be buried there, thou and all thy friends to whom thou hast prophesied lies.*" " (Jer 20:4-6). This young man is humble towards God, he recognises His Justice in the tragedy of deportation. The king dreams about a great mammoth Statue representing the reign of Nabucodonosor; the silver bust and arms represent the reign of the Medes and Persians; the bronze pelvis and thighs represent the Greek reign with Alexander the Great; the iron legs represent Rome "*strong as iron that breaks and demolishes everything and just like iron that breaks everything, it will break everything*". Finally the clay and iron feet where a reign will rise that will be in part fragile as clay due to a union made for interest and in another part strong as the Roman Empire was.

The dream of the statue ends with a stone that falls off a mountain. This stone destroys the statue leaving no trace of it and without any help from man. "*But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than anyone living, but for their sakes who shall make known the interpretation to the king, and that thou mightest know the thoughts of thy heart. "Thou, O king, sawest; and behold, a great image! This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible. This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, his legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay. Thou sawest until a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and broke them to pieces. Then were the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them. And the stone that smote the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth. "This is the dream, and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. Thou, O king, art a king of kings; for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath He given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold. (Babylon) And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee (Medes and Persians), and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth (Greece). And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron (Rome), inasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things; and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise. And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potter's clay and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it the strength of the iron, inasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay (the government of the Antichrist). And as the toes of the feet were part of iron and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly broken. And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men; but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay. And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a Kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the Kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever (the reign of Christ). Inasmuch as thou*

sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it broke in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold, the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter. And the dream is certain and the interpretation thereof sure." " (Dan. 2:30-45)

The consistency of the material indicates the value of the political power each reign has that was very strong at the time of Babylon, pseudo-democratic at the time of the Romans whose Senate had a strong authority and could influence the Emperor's actions. Also the Mede and Persian kings had to submit to "The Law of the Medes and Persians"; that's why they are silver, less precious than gold.

Between the fourth reign – the Roman Empire – and the fifth reign – politically fragile but militarily strong – there is the period in which Israel will no longer exist as a Nation but then will come together again at the end of time. The Stone that makes all human reigns disappear is Christ who then establishes His reign making us forget the present reign of mankind full of torment and blood.

70 weeks – 70 x 7 = 490 years – 483 + 7 Tribulation		GOLD: Babylonian Empire 605 B.C. Winged Lion (Chapter 7)
		SILVER: Mede and Persian Empire 539 B.C. Bear (Chapter 7) Ram (Chapter 8)
		BRONZE: Greek Empire 336 B.C. Winged Leopard (Chapter 7) Goat (Chapter 8)
		IRON: Roman Empire 50 B.C. Beast (Chapter 7)
		IRON & CLAY : New Roman Empire – 10 governments support the Antichrist (Beast). Date ???? A.D.

The beginning of history is considered corresponding with the use of writing, i.e. about 3000 B.C. with the use of the cuneiform script of the Sumerians and the hieroglyphics of the Egyptians. Other scholars date Babylon's cuneiform script to 2300 B.C.. However, the first important reigns began rising after one another starting from 2450 B.C. with the beginning of the Egyptian monarchy. The Babylonian monarchy began in 2300 B.C.; the Phoenician one began in 1550 B.C., the Assyrian one in 1500 B.C. just like the Iranian civilisation. The Indian civilisation starts in 1200 B.C. as the Hellenic one. The Lydian and Phrygian civilisation began in 900 B.C., the Etruscans appeared in 650 B.C.. The birth of Rome has been established in 753 B.C.. So in 605, little after the birth of the Roman Empire, Daniel the prophet describes the ages linked to imperial dominion that will follow one another in the world in compliance with an established sequence. Daniel also describes in detail many episodes typical of the each Empire. These reigns are all related to Israel. All of them will dominate, massacre and persecute Israel.

Daniel the prophet basically describes the Babylonian reign as a very powerful, bright and absolute reign in which the king is like God on earth and his laws are just like divine laws. Each empire "swallows" the previous one, submits it, absorbs its culture and, at the same time, imposes on these conquered lands their own uses and customs. The Medes and Persians swept away the Babylonian Empire up to when Alexander the Great did not defeat them. But Alexander's reign did not pass onto his offspring; it was actually subdivided among his generals who then established four reigns that lasted until Rome conquered everything that was possible. The end of Rome ends the last "world" Empire. Until this will not be re-established at the end of time, the aggregation wave through economic interest and the need for international security will bring more and more integration among the countries in this world with a stronger impulse for the most industrialised nations. Computer systems are the real system through which all information and financial flows – and these are the real catalyser of the world union, the so-called "globalisation" - come together. Ten countries mainly from what was the Roman empire will dispose of the world's power up to when "mankind" will not take advantage of this. Then this will be destroyed not by 'mankind' but by Christ.

THE TRUTH

After 20 days of arduous searches, terrible moments of despair, not being able to find a logical explanation for why their father was no longer there, after having checked every bed in every hospital in town and put up photos of Simon on every wall and signboards looking for missing relatives, after having taken in his dirty clothes so they could verify his DNA and the dentist x rays, Simon's mother behaved with an ultra-dynamic and ultra-efficient attitude; it seemed as if she were standing up only with her tense muscles not with her bones. She couldn't get any sleep, she carried on staring at the ceiling in the darkness of her room, trying to pray but her heart was hard as a rock; her mind kept going back to her boy who was no longer there, she thought of when life was slower, Christmas had a special charm, presents were chosen and wrapped carefully; she thought of Simon's joy and how anxious he was to open his presents. The laughs, gags and simple soul of her child. Now it seems impossible that God could have made such a thing happen to her, to Simon, to her family, her city, her nation. She knows that God did not want to break her heart. Sarah knows that "everything cooperates with the good of those who love God" but this time the test is too hard also for her. They've killed her son. It's just as if they had torn away her insides, the stomach twists, she doesn't want to eat or speak, she wants to be left alone with her pain and with her mind thinking of God who does not refuse His consolation in moments of despair and deep loneliness caused by the loss of Simon. She feels the Spirit of God wrapping her from head to toe, making her feel a shiver into her bones up into her brain as a divine caress who only those who have known Christ can recognise. Sarah's feelings are very confused and strong; on the one hand she feels the need to trust in God to understand and analyse more profoundly what's happened, to ask Him why He gave her such strong pain, something she cannot describe, something that catches her and holds her tight and does not let her get away. On the other hand she would like to argue with her God who made her "little boy" get killed. There is no greater pain in the world for a mother to outlive her child. Seeing him die is the most tragic thing for her, the most painful thing she could have ever imagined. Sarah would like to say to God the words of the song Simon loved so much, a country song.

"No next Time" by Allison Moorer

This time Sarah's rage is for her God, she feels betrayed, the melody of the song plays in her head as it were the soundtrack of a movie shown in front of eyes. When the words say "I didn't want to break your heart" she sees the airplane turning and going straight into the south tower, exploding and taking away thousands of lives among them that of her boy and what's left of his body has not yet been found. In this moment Sarah's only valid and possible interlocutor is God. There is nobody in this world, no human being that can be good enough for facing such a devastating thing as Simon's murder; revenge, or retaliation mean nothing to her. She knows and has always known ever since she first met Christ that He is in control of everything. Now she wants to know why, she wants an explanation, understand what's happening and more than anything why not her instead of her poor son.

The phone rings. It's the police. Thanks to his DNA they have identified what's left of Simon's body. He's unrecognisable, concrete colour, all his bones broken and his skin in pieces; the skull was smashed in a way that makes it impossible to understand what he originally looked like. None of his family wants to see what's left of the body; they'd rather remember his smile. Simon: a tall, nice boy with a great sense of humour, intelligent, quick and reliable. At least one positive thing: he can have a proper funeral. After Sarah had definitely established it was Simon, the first thing she did was to phone Zaderk to tell him. He left for New York at once to be at the funeral of his best friend and be close to his family to bring as much comfort as possible and good memories of his friend.

GREEKS, MEDES AND PERSIANS, ROME, THE WORLD'S GOVERNMENT, THE REIGN OF CHRIST

Daniel analyses profoundly the topic of the human reigns in chapter 7 (3-27) *"And four great beasts came up from the sea (mankind), diverse one from another (Four human reigns). The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings (Babylon). I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made to stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it. And behold, another beast, a second, like unto a bear. And it raised up itself on one side (Medes and Persians with a preponderant Persian side), and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it (Sushan, Lydia and Asia Minor); and they said thus unto it, 'Arise, devour much flesh.' After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard (Alexander the Great), which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl. The beast had also four heads (Asia Minor, Egypt, Syria and Macedonia); and dominion was given to it. After this I saw in the night visions, and behold, a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly (Rome); and it had great iron teeth. It devoured, and broke in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it; and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it, and it had ten horns. I considered the horns, and behold, there came up among them another little horn (Antichrist), before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots. And behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.*

"I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days sat down, whose garment was white as snow and the hair of His head like the pure wool. His throne was like the fiery flame, and His wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before Him. Thousand thousands ministered unto Him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened. "I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spoke; I beheld even till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed and given to the burning flame (the Return of Jesus into glory in Armageddon). As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away, yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time (God consents to the survivors to live during the one-thousand-year Reign maintaining their national identity). "I saw in the night visions, and behold, one like the Son of Man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought Him near before Him. And there was given Him dominion and glory and a Kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve Him (One-thousand-year Reign). His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His Kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

"I, Daniel, was grieved in my spirit in the midst of my body, and the visions of my head troubled me. I came near unto one of those who stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me and made me know the interpretation of the things: 'These great beasts, which are four, are four kings who shall arise out of the earth. But the saints of the Most High shall take the Kingdom and possess the Kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever (One-thousand-year Reign). ' "Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron and his nails of brass, which devoured, broke in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; and of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up and before whom three fell, even of the horn that had eyes and a mouth that spoke very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows (The Antichrist, the Beast that rises from the Sea). I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints and prevailed against them (The Antichrist in the second phase of Tribulation lasting 3 and a half years will win over those converted to Christ) until the Ancient of Days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High (Jesus returns to glory with the Saints of the Church kidnapped before Tribulation); and the time came that the saints possessed the Kingdom (the Millennium). "Thus he said: 'The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise (Ten governments will rise from what was the Roman Empire); and another shall rise after them (the Antichrist), and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue

three kings (Daniel repeats several times that three of the ten governments will be destroyed by the Antichrist, maybe they will be killed or eliminated in some way, maybe it's a special sign to identify the Antichrist the moment he will come to power). *And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws; and they shall be given into his hand* (he will win over converted Christians called the saints of Tribulation – there will be no Church) *until a time, and times, and the dividing of time.* "But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end (Jesus returns to glory with the Saints of the Church raptured before Tribulation). *And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose Kingdom is an everlasting Kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him* (the One-thousand-year Reign).' " (Dan. 7:3-27)

The sequence of events is repeated three times in this part. In this way also the message of God is interpreted by Daniel. In our time – at least for those who studied history – the sequence of events of these human reigns that have dealt with Israel is clear:

The first reign is Babylon, contemporaneous of Daniel; the second is the Mede and Persian reign; the third is that of Alexander the Great with four heads that represent the four generals that will subdivide Alexander's reign, Asia Minor, Egypt, Syria and Macedonia. The most powerful among these were the Ptolemies who ruled in Egypt for 293 years from 323 B.C. to 30 A.D. and the Seleucids who ruled over Syria from 321 B.C. to 65 B.C. and where Antiochus IV Epiphan came from, a terrible persecutor of the people of Israel. He also sacrificed a pig in the temple of Salomon in Jerusalem (rebuilt after it had been destroyed by Nabucodonosor); he was a prototype of the Antichrist. Daniel's prophecy in chapter 8 refers to him when he repeats the sequence of the coming of Alexander the Great in 333 B.C.: *"I saw the ram* (Mede and Persian Empire) *pushing westward and northward and southward, so that no beasts might stand before him, neither was there any that could deliver out of his hand; but he did according to his will and became great. And as I was considering, behold, a hegoat* (Alexander the Great the Macedonian) *came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground* (Alexander conquered everything that was possible to conquer in ten years) ; *and the goat had a notable horn between his eyes. And he came to the ram that had two horns, which I had seen standing before the river, and ran unto him in the fury of his power. And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with fury against him, and smote the ram and broke his two horns* (Medes and Persians) ; *and there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground and stamped upon him. And there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand. Therefore the hegoat waxed very great; and when he was strong, the great horn was broken, and in its place came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven* (Asia Minor, Egypt, Syria and Macedonia) . *And out of one of them came forth a little horn* (Antiochus IV Epiphan and the Antichrist, bivalent prophecy) , *which waxed exceeding great, toward the south and toward the east and toward the pleasant land. And it waxed great, even to the host of heaven; and it cast down some of the host and some of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them. Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host; and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. And a host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered."* (Dan. 8:4-12) the same sequence is also described by Daniel: *"And now will I show thee the truth: Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia* (Ashur, Artaxerxes, Darius Hystaspis – not Mede) , *and the fourth shall be far richer than them all* (Xerxes 480 B.C.); *and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Greece. And a mighty king shall stand up, who shall rule with great dominion and do according to his will* (Alexander the Great 335 B.C.). *And when he shall stand up, his kingdom shall be broken and shall be divided toward the four winds of heaven* (Ptolomy, Lysimachus, Seleucus Nicator and Cassandrus) , *and not to his posterity* (indeed it will be subdivided among his generals) *nor according to his dominion which he ruled; for his kingdom shall be plucked up, even for others*

besides those.” (Dan. 11:2-4). It is surprising for those who know history to see how God through Daniel revealed amazing details on the works of the Persian kings. As a matter of fact, in order to justify the amazing precision and incredible amount of particulars, many non-believers have stated that the book of Daniel is much more recent than 600 B.C. but the translation of the seventies (in Greek) was made long before the facts mentioned in the book especially for what concerns Antiochus Epiphan, and the book of Daniel is present in the translation of the seventies. The Judean historian Joseph Flavius states that when Alexander the Great came to Jerusalem in 332 B.C., the high priest showed him Daniel’s prophecies that made a great impression on Alexander. Also Jesus often mentioned the book of Daniel.

The fourth beast is different from the previous ones also because its reign is different compared to the other reigns as it was broken up and in between there was an indefinite period starting from its fall up to the World’s Government established by the Antichrist.

The Roman government also extends to after the end of time because the fifth reign represented by iron and clay has iron among its material just like the Roman Empire.

It is clear that up to now God wanted to reveal that starting from Daniel’s time five Empires will follow one another and they will all interact with Israel. The fifth empire is an extension of the fourth one and from history we can identify the Babylonians followed by the Medes and Persians, then the Greek empire subdivided into four reigns, then the fourth government – Rome – that was extremely vicious against Israel and that killed the Messiah. As Israel is completely destroyed by the fourth government – The Roman Empire – in 70 A.D., the fifth government will have to wait for Israel to come back before rising.

We believers wait for the return of Jesus for the Church as said by Paul the Apostle: “ *For this we say unto you by the Word of the Lord: that we who are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not precede those who are asleep. For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so shall we ever be with the Lord.*” (I Tess. 4:15-17). Maybe we will not recognise the fifth government, we won’t even recognise the Antichrist but we can understand the foundations of the structure that will support him as we have the chance to understand the situations that will come before the making of such an Empire.

The considerations on the prophecies are often destroyed by giving one interpretation that has to be always different and contorted compared to the direct and simple meaning of the analysed sentences. I believe that every good interpretation has to pass the “Child’s test”, i.e. you take a child under 10 years of age, you make him/her read the passage and then you ask: what did you understand?

If the passage says: “*For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so shall we ever be with the Lord*”(I Tes. 4:16-17) what will the answer be? “The Lord will call those who have died in Christ even though they are dead will come back to life, then we who have not died yet but are still alive will be taken away by the clouds where the Lord is waiting for us and we will stay with Him forever more!” – that’s it – There is no twisted reasoning that holds. You either believe in the Bible or else if you don’t believe in this word you have no reason to believe in any other thing enclosed in it. If most of the prophecies of the Bible have come true it is definitely guaranteed that also those that have not yet come true will do so in the future.

THE LAST GOODBYE

On this day that I would never have wanted to live I wished to remember the stature, the person: Simon, my friend Simon. A “boy” of 40 whose life was swept away by one of the most cowardly and indecorous acts in the entire history of mankind.

We have to realise that in God’s eyes physical death has a very important and serious role “*Precious in the sight of the LORD is the death of His saints.*” (Psalm 116:15). Simon is a real Christian. I’m speaking in the present because for those that have understood the message of Christ physical death does not have a real meaning of misery. It is the end of a cycle, a phase for reaching a better position, i.e. to see what He, our Lord is like and live with Him forever.

Simon is a real Christian. He has dedicated all his time in this life, all his thoughts and all his efforts to extend the Gospel; his role for his period on earth was like of a Warrior of Christ. But the image of this Warrior is different from that normally imagined. He who fights for Christ has different weapons our brother Paul the Apostle taught us:

*“Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. **For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Therefore, take unto you the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day and, having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girded about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness, and your feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace. Above all, take the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God.**”* (Ephes. 6:11-17).

A Warrior of Christ doesn’t cause any protests, he is a spiritual warrior, a constant though discrete witness; his food, study and strength is the Word of God. He acts carefully, in a discrete though resolute way and just like Simon, he does not criticise or complain but enjoys everything he has in each and every day in this world. Simon had understood that to be a human being is a great privilege; to be part of the Great Plan of God, an intelligent being placed on earth was a privilege he always kept in his mind and enjoyed day in day out.

One autumn day after it had rained there was wind and while walking in a park he realised that the only noise he could hear was the leaves in the trees brushing against each other. He stopped to think about this feature of creation and said: “here God has taken care of creating noise within His perfection. Everything is in its place, wedged together like in a jigsaw. Sound is the basis of communication; we can speak, sing, feel danger and warn someone about it”. Simon knew how to enjoy life not because he could have bought anything he wanted or because of his looks or social status but because his brain had been changed by His God. Therefore, he could enjoy being a human being and understand his importance in this world. This was due to his knowledge of God, his relationship with his brothers of faith who he felt were real brothers not just relatives. He had a complete and total consideration of his neighbours; he was able to understand he was facing a human being, someone like him without weighing up the other person’s belief, origin or status. He never forced things and was able to evangelise also when he didn’t want to.

When we used to work together in London he bought a jumper from Benetton in Cheapside and paid by credit card. After a few months he noticed the amount had not been charged to his account, so he went to the shop and with his receipt told the shop assistant: “I’d like to inform you that I still haven’t been charged for this bill on my Visa. Is there a problem?”. The girl at the counter almost leapt to embrace him and with tears in her eyes said: “Thanks! Thanks for coming back! They detracted the money from my pay. I had not realised the receipt was unreadable (there was no POS in 1983). I would never have thought I could recognise the client and now he is here. It’s just like a miracle!”. Simon discretely and tranquilly signed the receipt again and explained that if Christ had not been in his heart, he would never have notified anyone. He took advantage of the situation to explain the meaning of Christ’s salvation: He is a personal Saviour, an individual God who decides to live in the heart of those who call Him, wiping out death and creating the foundations for attaining knowledge.

Simon never saw that girl again but he knew Jesus was taking care of her.

Exactly, Jesus was taking care of her because Simon knew Jesus was a God of action, a dynamic God not just a little baby in a barn or a corpse on a cross but the living God. During our evenings together or when we used to go to play football or tennis we talked a lot; often we made fun of each other about our traditional Christian view. We spoke to each other like those who without the liberating energy of Christ want to propose the Gospel as a human mission not as an element placed in a context where Christ is in control. So we made fun of “bigots” who address you very softly, almost fearfully saying “brother do not behave like that. The Lord gets upset. plead for your sins to be forgotten: mea culpa, mea grandissima culpa; you’re trash and God is great and far; you must suffer if you want to reach Him!”. Simon knew why we were in a “Post-Christian” civilisation but each time he got near it he never could take it so much. It made him angry to see so many resources and space being used for activities that were called Christian but were useless as they no longer contained the main message of the Gospel: personal salvation of Christ brings mankind to have an equal relationship with god (for as much as one can imagine). Simon hated hypocrites or spiritual weakness. It seems as if a Christian should ask permission or forgiveness for existing. Any kind of stupidity, theory or religion is given importance and space and the more absurd it is, the more importance it achieves. Meanwhile, time goes by and people die without Christ and wars and conflicts increase and will increase even more. The truth is there but nobody takes it into consideration. In his messages Simon often remembered that Jesus is no longer in the barn, in Mary’s arms or nailed onto the cross! He used to enhance enthusiastically and with fervent emotion that Christ had resurrected and now lived in the hearts of believers through His Spirit; and Simon was one of these believers.

Simon had acquired an incredible knowledge of the Bible, was a blessing for the Church and his family. We knew each other very well, we faced many challenges together and I’m sure if he were alive today he would say:

“Have no grudges for what they have done to me. They’ve killed my body but my soul cannot be touched by any other man and now it is safe next to my beloved Lord. It is much worse for those poor ones who killed themselves and are now waiting to be resurrected only to be condemned for eternity. There is only one spiritual truth and mankind cannot change it. Who believed in the Living God can be recognised by His spirit living inside him, there’s no other way! All fruits come from God but if there is no fruit, they will think God is a sterile invention. Real evidence of the knowledge of God is given by evangelisation, the will to spread the knowledge of Christ. At the end of time, society, as indicated in the Bible, will tend to flatten and suffocate evidence; only few will emerge but they’ll have to be very strong and determined. Society tends to make everyone the same, any faith is just as good. This is a satanic strategy to take as many as possible to hell or into Tribulation. So I’ve left before my old age or the return of Christ but I leave one message to my brothers and sisters in Christ: Do not get suffocated by daily routine, read the Word every day, warn those near you that Jesus is coming back as this is everything a Christian should do; there is no other role for us in this world but to act as strong, dynamic, effective, firm and available sentinels. If you have the chance, bring to those who killed me and to their supporters the message of the salvation in Christ, do not kill them, do not seek revenge. Yes, he who is wrong has to pay but one thing is justice, another is revenge - that belongs to God “*Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath; for it is written: "Vengeance is Mine; I will repay, saith the Lord."*” (Rom: 12-19). Bearing in mind the plan of God, the most important aspect is that mankind is saved from eternal condemnation; all the rest dies. I’ve lived with this target and I hope it will remain as an example”.

Simon spent some time in this world explaining the gospel to his Jewish friends and relatives and I’m talking to those who do not want to accept the truth that Jesus is the Living God and you practising Jews listening do not get scandalised! You know well that the man-Messiah you’re waiting for has to be from the tribe of Judah and that He had to come 483 years after the walls of Jerusalem had been rebuilt “*Know therefore and understand that from the going forth of the*

commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem until the Messiah the Prince, shall be seven weeks and threescore and two weeks; the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublesome times. And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off (Jesus), but not for Himself; and the people of the prince who shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. And the end thereof shall be with a flood, and until the end of the war desolations are determined.” (Dan. 9:25-26) and that he has to descend from Isaiah and David so what’s left to ascertain if a man descends from these? Jesus warned his people saying the false Christ will be recognised as the Saviour “*I have come in My Father's name, and ye receive Me not; **if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.***” (John. 5:43) while he will be Israel’s ruin and will drag Israel into the greatest persecution of its history “*For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And unless those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake, those days shall be shortened.*” (Mat. 24:21-22). You do not understand what a great blessing the Lord gave you by putting you in touch with Simon! How many times he told you Jesus Christ is the Messiah who had to come into this world twice not only once as you still believe - just like Pharisees two-thousand years ago who did not recognise him – as the number of prophecies of the Messiah in glory as liberator from the oppressor are eight times more than those on the coming of Christ to pay for the sins of His People (see Isaiah 53). You give more importance to the liberating aspect but you will still suffer a lot before understanding that looking at the prophecies on the Messiah is like looking at two mountains of the same height one behind the other; their peaks seem to meet but between them there is an immense valley: the age of grace. The first peak is the coming of the suffering Messiah as Saviour, the second is His coming as liberator of Israel from the oppression of the head of the World Government.

The heart of some was touched by Zaderk’s words but most of them disagreed and some even left disgusted and angry. But Simon used to be even harder and more inflexible in stating the Gospel to his Jewish friends and relatives; he knew well their spiritual condition; as a matter of fact Paul the Apostle, who was also an eminent Jewish scholar, said: “*Thou sayest well! Because of unbelief they were broken off (The Jews), and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear; for if God spared not the natural branches (The Jews), take heed lest He also spare not thee. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on those who fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in His goodness. Otherwise, thou also shalt be cut off. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again (Conversion of Israel during Tribulation). For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree (the Gospel announced to gentiles, i.e. non-Jewish), how much more shall these, which are the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? For I, brethren, would not have you be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits: **that blindness in part has happened to Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles** (up to the rapture of the Church) *be come in. And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written: "There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob (Jesus will come back into glory). For this is My covenant unto them when I shall take away their sins."*” (Rom. 11:20-27).*

Zaderk finished by saying: “Now that Simon has gone, the Lord has called him. My dear friend; he was taken away not only from me. My beloved best friend is now in the presence of the Lord. Now we are all a little more lonely. Even if one knows for sure he is alive and fine and has everything, the death of a brother in Christ like Simon is for who remains like a long sharp blade that gets you inside when you’re walking on your own. You think of the hate around this world so selfish and without God, bitter and vain. You pray and the tears fall down your face demonstrating you can do nothing, you little man with God in your heart. You cannot explain, make yourself be heard. You have peace, you have eternity and this is fine but you cannot fully enjoy it until compassion towards your neighbour enlarges your heart. Your friend gave you energy; tackle him comforted you; even if you were miles away, you knew through praying that you fought the same battle. But now

we have been hit profoundly; our enemy has placed his shot well and we have been hit. We thought we were invincible. We, the children of the Living God, said we were impenetrable and indeed we are spiritually but we are in enemy land and still earthly beings in the flesh with a difficult task: to make people understand that God is alive and that His name is Jesus Christ, rejecting fanaticisms though representing His love”.

70 WEEKS CORRESPONDING TO 490 YEARS

“Seventy weeks are determined concerning thy people and concerning thy holy city to finish the transgression and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the Most Holy. Know therefore and understand that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem. (20th year of the reign of Artaxerxes – 445 B.C.) until the Messiah the Prince (Jesus), shall be seven weeks and threescore and two weeks; the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublesome times. And after threescore and two weeks (a total of 69 7-year-periods corresponding to 483 years – each 360 days long. From 14th March 445 B.C. to 6th April 32 A.D., the day in which Jesus enters Jerusalem corresponding to 173,880 days as 476 years each 365 days long from 445 B.C. to 32 A.D. plus 116 days of leap years, plus 24 days from 14th March to 6th April is $476 \times 365 = 173,740 + 116 + 24 = 173,880$ that corresponds to the prophecy of Daniel inclusive of adjustments on the year zero and the difference between the Julian and Gregorian calendar) shall Messiah be cut off, but not for Himself (Jesus Christ); and the people of the prince who shall come (Antichrist) shall destroy the city (Jerusalem) and the sanctuary. And the end thereof shall be with a flood, and until the end of the war desolations are determined. And he shall confirm the covenant with many (the agreement with Israel that will guarantee Peace and security in Palestine, starting the 7-year Tribulation period) for one week (7-year Tribulation); and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease (after 3 and a half years he will do something despicable in the rebuilt temple). And for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate (Antichrist), even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate (Return of Christ into Glory for liberating Israel)” (Dan 9:24-27).

The literal translation of 70 weeks is “70 septenars” in which the word septenar is intended as a seven-year period.

What has to happen in these 490 years? First of all we must say that this prophecy is exclusively for the people of Israel not for Gentiles (non-Jewish).

1. Make transgression stop
2. Put an end to sin
3. Expiate iniquity
4. declare an eternal justice
5. Seal vision and prophecy
6. Anoint a very holy place

For all these things to happen 490 years should pass; the time of Gentiles should pass and Israel should convert to Christ. Only when Jesus will reign on earth and Israel will His witness among the nations be, there will be no more wrongdoing on earth, the sin suffering Israel and humanity will no longer exist, wickedness will have been expiated from the nation of Israel, an eternal justice will be established, visions and prophecies will be confirmed (to seal resources close them with a seal and definitely verify). The holiest place of the new time in the middle of Jerusalem during the Millennium will once again be enhanced.

The 490 year period is divided into two parts: the first part is 483 years long, the second 7. Between these two periods there is the time of the Church, an indefinitely long period beginning with the resurrection of Christ with His disciples who basically represent the Church; then a stable aspect will be attained at Pentecost with the Holy Ghost living inside believers and will end with the taking of the Church.

The beginning of the 70th week, i.e. the 7-year period dominated by the Antichrist does not coincide with the taking of the Church but starts with the signing of a 7-year agreement between the Antichrist and Israel that will guarantee peace in the Holy Land. We are not entitled to know how long the period between the taking of the Church and the signing of the agreement will be. However, it must be a time long enough for the Antichrist to establish his conning “truth”.

“For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now holdeth back will hold him back (the Holy Ghost), until he is taken out of the way (the Holy Ghost will be taken away as the Church will be removed and the Spirit will return to act just like at the time of the Old Testament). And then shall that wicked one be revealed (the Antichrist), whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming (Return into glory after the 7 years). Even him, whose coming is according to the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all the deceit of unrighteousness in those who perish, because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie (Those who don't know the Plan of God and His Word have no tools to defend themselves. Appearances will be in favour of the Antichrist. Mankind will prefer listening to him than to Christ), that they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (i.e. will undergo the judgements described in the Revelation) (II Thes. 2:7-12)”.

In chapter 11 of Daniel, the character of the Antichrist as well as the particulars accompanying him are outlined. He will be a detestable man; he will take the place of a governor who will make Israel pay homage. This governor will be swiftly eliminated with no fights. The despicable man will have no right to rule and without any spectacular or incredible action he will get hold of Israel. There will be enemy forces that will invade Israel but they will be defeated and Israel will be liberated by the Antichrist. In these circumstances those who previously signed the 7-year agreement will be swept away and eliminated. The agreement will be broken, the detestable man will betray his allies so that he can state his power though supported only by few.

While the provinces of Israel will be safe, the Antichrist will invade them and will do things that have never been done before, will share his conquests with his supporters and for a certain period will think about acting against all the world's powers. Then he will organise a great army and attack Egypt and the nations South Israel who will organise a very strong and great army. But this army will be defeated through conspiracies, its leader will be betrayed by those of his table. The army of the South will be disseminated and many will die.

The Antichrist will persecute Israelis who in the meantime will have converted to Christ; some will pretend to have converted . The rebuilt temple of Jerusalem will be profaned by placing in it “the abomination of desolation”. Many will be contaminated by his smooth talk. The Antichrist will rise and elevate above any other god; he will pronounce unheard words against God and will flourish until his end. Those who will recognise him will be filled with honours and riches. At the moment of the end all those countries that were powerful empires will gain new strategic and military importance. The Northern Israeli army (called the Assyrian) and the army of the South will go against the Antichrist but Jesus himself will intervene putting an end to the conflict, destroying the Assyrian and getting rid of the Antichrist and the False prophet.

THE EXPLANATION

After the funeral as usual in the Evangelic tradition, Zaderk went to the Simon's family house for some refreshments. This tradition is to relax people's souls and, through the company of others, help alleviate a little grief.

Elizabeth, Simon's youngest daughter, approaches Zaderk who picks her up and tries to give her some consolation for the death of her father. The little girl with tears in her big blue eyes asks him very naively: "Now that dad has gone up in the sky I'm gonna reach him when the Lord comes or when I die, aren't I Zaderk?"

"Certainly" said Zaderk.

"So if I died today I could see my dad right away, couldn't I?" Elizabeth continued.

"That's right" Zaderk said feeling a little bit uneasy talking about death with the little girl.

"I wanna die today! I don't wanna stay without my daddy! Who wants to stay in this house if I cannot see my daddy. I wanna die so I can be with him forever!"

"You shouldn't say that" answered Zaderk trying to suppress his tears and the sadness coming from inside. "One day Elizabeth we will all meet papa Simon again. Life on earth is a wonderful thing but it is only temporary; it's just a transient phase".

"What does transient mean?" asked Elizabeth.

"It means we are just passing by like when you're on holiday and you stop at a hotel along the road to rest a bit. Your stay in the hotel is transient, only for a day. We are in this world until our final day comes. That day we'll probably understand how much the previous day or year was really worth. God has made us to love us and enable us to love". Then – interrupting Zaderk - Elizabeth says:

"But how can I love my daddy now that he's no longer here? God was wrong, he took him away from me while I was still little. I cannot love him; who can I love if not my mummy and daddy? You see, it's useless to stay alive!"

Zaderk could no longer hold back his tears. He tried to put his thoughts together so that he could say something that wasn't pathetic and that could be a valid answer and explain the meaning of life to the little girl.

"you see Elizabeth, we Christians have an important task to carry out in this world. We've got to inform others that God exists and came to die so that we could have eternal life. One day he'll come back from the sky and take us away. You also have this task, even if you are little now; you're important for your friends and their families. Then, one day, Jesus our Lord will establish his reign in this world that will last one thousand years."

"One thousand years? Whoa!" Elizabeth's face brightened up.

"Yes. One thousand years during which life will be similar to the present one but will be ruled by Jesus. But first Jesus has to come back from the sky to take us away. There will be a brief period of great wars because people are very bad and would rather make war against each other than to believe in Jesus; so Jesus will make them understand what this world would be like without God. After that time some will survive and will see Jesus and all of us – papa Simon, you, your mummy and granny and all the brothers of the Church – that have come to free them from war. All survivors will stay in this world and repopulate it and we'll also be with them all together. There will be a perfect and wonderful peace."

"Sorry Zaderk, are you sure I'll see and recognise my daddy and he'll recognise me?"

"Of course Elizabeth. Our body will be the same as the body of Jesus after his resurrection. He spent forty days with his disciples, he spoke and ate. Jesus was the first to have this new body. Believe me. Just like God was able to make our present bodies, he'll be just as good in making a new one, leaving our personal features intact, i.e. knowing that I am myself and you are you!"

Elizabeth was much calmer and relaxed after this conversation; she got off Zaderk's lap and ran to her mother saying: "mummy, mummy, don't worry, even if daddy died when Jesus comes back we'll be with him for another one thousand years in this world! And we'll have a new body; Jesus has already made one before, he can make another one, even better than this one!"

A notable man, a colleague of Simon, who had attended the funeral approached Zaderk. He was fifty years old and had never seriously thought about God. Zaderk's words and, more than anything, Simon's death had made him stop and think more deeply about his life. John was an important manager in the exchange office, his yearly salary had six zeros but after the towers had fallen and many of his friends and colleagues had died, money had suddenly lost its value and power; moreover, Zaderk's words on the prophecies had particularly motivated him. So he asked Zaderk what he thought the Jews thought of Christianity. They sat in the garden. The grass was well cut, the temperature still pleasant, a quiet area. It was quite easy for Zaderk to relax enough to find the right words: "At first, the Jews were the greatest enemies of the new "sect" – i.e. the Christians. They said that the sacrifice to redeem us from all sins had to be made only in the temple of Jerusalem; they clearly argued against the teaching of Jesus which stated that His sacrifice replaced and cancelled the sacrifice of the temple. This is definitely the reason why God allowed Emperor Titus to destroy the temple and disperse the people in 70 A.D.. In this way he eliminated all pretexts for the tradition as well as the confusion in all the Jewish communities in which Christ was being announced. But the Jewish people have a fundamental role in the Plan of God. For mankind to clearly understand the role of Jesus, the expiation of man's sins and especially those of the people, the concept of sin as "transgression of the law" had to be clear. This law had to be given through one population. This is the importance of Israel. The law is the "guardian" demonstrating human incapacity in practising divine justice. Only after having demonstrated human inadequacy before the law one can understand the liberating role of Christ".

Zaderk is the author of a book that has also been translated in English and explains the prophecies of the Bible. It's distributed privately due to the patronage system of the Italian publishing market, held by few who decide what is more convenient to publish. In the field in which the book was distributed it led to a great debate and in certain cases has become an easy target for all those prejudiced towards the "Evangelist" view of the world and life considered as bigot, integralist and reactionary by those hypocrites who boast equality and fraternity at all costs. These people are basically shortsighted and egotistical. This is why Moshe Ackermann, chief Rabbi and family friend of Simon, feels free to interrupt the conversation between Zaderk and John the businessman saying: "your words at the funeral were hard and audacious my dear Zaderk! How dare you criticise us Jews? And publicly, taking advantage of such a tragic event like Simon's funeral.". John is dumbfounded by the resentment and vehemence of the Rabbi towards Zaderk who tranquilly and carefully replied to him: "being a witness, explaining the gospel, making Jews know the Plan of God was Simon's daily task that he always carried out since his conversion. He was surprised in seeing how so many people next to him were the living evidence of God's prophecies of his People who though they read the Bible every day did not understand that Jesus Christ was its central part."

"That's enough" replied the Rabbi "You're sectarians, idolaters; you have no right to name the Most Highly! Christ is not the Messiah. He was a prophet. Your interpretation is wrong. The Messiah is a Jew, a man not a god. He doesn't take away sins; he is the instrument God uses to restore Israel and he will carry out his moral and spiritual regeneration of all mankind making it worthy of being citizens of the reign. Your supposition makes you blind and makes you believe you are the guardians of the truth. There's only a few of you in all the world. You're only able to spread dissection and disagreement instead of looking for peace and equality! Every man and woman knows that if one's faith is real and his actions are coherent, he will contribute to create God's reign in this world and God in his justice will consider the good deeds of everyone, Christian, Muslim, Jewish or Buddhist. We should not stop on what divides us but on what brings us together. We all believe in one God, the same God that created all things. This insisting on wanting to convert everything towards Jesus Christ only leads to conflicts and disagreement". Zaderk feels his blood, his stomach and his brain boiling inside him, he can hardly keep hold of himself and strongly replies to Moshe in front of John who was fervently following the discussion: "My dear Moshe, the fact that for me Christ is the real Messiah, the living God who once was incarnated and now lives in the heart of each member of the Church is not only something I have read in the Bible; it is also the

work his Spirit has done in my mind, in my way of thinking; this is the hard evidence for me to believe in the living God. I was a blasphemer, ignorant, self-centred, with no principles, I only thought about what was better for me, only thinking about what I could have first with no future and no knowledge. But this is probably of little interest to you. From your words I've understood how the Antichrist will make himself be accepted by the Jews as the Messiah. The reign of God will not be made by men whose heart is "desperately wicked" "*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked; who can know it?*" (Jer. 17:9). The evidence of Jesus is life for those who believe and death for those who refuse Him. Without evidence there is nothing but death. Who adapts the truth to the needs of listeners is heading for misfortune! If someone has cancer and you tell him he has the flu, you will only make things worse because he will think it is something silly and will not take care of himself. Jesus cures spiritual cancer because he takes care of our diseases: "*He is despised and rejected of men, a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief. And we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not. Surely He hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions; He was bruised for our iniquities. The chastisement of our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed.*" (Is 53:3-5). These are not the words of a reactionary Christian but those of Isaiah, a prophet that you, chief Rabbi, should know well. Who's the prophet talking about in this passage? A great leader? A political liberator? Or is he talking about Christ, the only one who perfectly resembles this prophecy! Jesus descended from David; where can you find someone descending from David nowadays? It's true, the Antichrist will find a way to show he descends from David but it will not be true as everything else he will say to affirm himself. I'm not presumptuous. I'm giving you facts long-established in the Scripture. You decide. I'm not looking for new members for my religion; I'm telling you to study the Scriptures, believe in our Lord Jesus and you will be saved and then personally cultivate your relationship with God". But here comes Geoff, a rich tradesman, just when John is about to ask: "But what is the role of money in the man of God? We're full of evangelisers always asking for money on TV, in the street, in church. The world of Finance is so complicated and at the same time is able to create richness and wealth. In most parts of the world you don't starve anymore and it could even be that globalisation, with some corrections, could bring wealth also in those parts of the world where people still die of starvation or diseases". Geoff replies saying: "The free market is the nourishment of our society; trade makes the economy healthy and creates wealth; globalisation can only improve things. It's true, the western model is not perfect but it has given food to millions of people that were starving 150 years ago. Maybe in the next 150 years it will bring food also to those who are starving now!" Margaret a member of the no-Global movement is stimulated by the topics and without hesitation sits down on a comfy chair and interrupts Geoff and John: "but who said we've got to fill the world with exhaust gas coming from cars? That we've got to eat fast food also in a forest, exploiting children for making footballs and carpets for the western world? This is globalisation! Poverty for many, affluence for few! We westerners want to export our beliefs, our faith, our products, our mentality all over the world. We want to make all societies the same, we think we are the guardians of wealth, we decide what culture and education is and then we establish that also others should accept it! Zaderk, you're a dreamer. You say that God exists. Why didn't he stop kamikazes from knocking down the towers? Your God should create spiritual wealth but during the Crusades many "infidels" were killed, the Church has slaughtered millions of people during the inquisition. Don't you think this God is a bit spoilt and bloodthirsty? Throughout the centuries a lot of money has been spent for building churches, statues, magnificent works of art for the church while people were dying of starvation! Aren't you ashamed of being called a Christian? The Maya, the Jews and the Arabs are crying for revenge for all the abuse they've had to take from you lot. Religious movements are political lobbies; they influence governments, are against abortion and the development of science."

Zaderk jumps up and everyone stops speaking. He's a big man, his face is serious; a hard look, a brief moment of silence while he scrutinises everyone there. His short hair and brown eyes catch

everyone's eye. A little cough, a sneer and as a reply to all the attacks he says: "Ok I've decided! After all that you have said I've got to choose between throwing myself out of a burning building after having stuffed myself with tablets or throw myself under an underground train". After a moment of silence everyone bursts out laughing especially those who first caught the Latin humour.

"Let's not panic as usual" says Zaderk and then continues: "For what concerns John's words on the use of money, we must say that many, also people who call themselves Christians, speculate in collecting money but we cannot be the "avengers"; everyone has to answer to God especially if he uses His name and if he breaks the law he should go to prison. Globalisation is an intermediate phase necessary for the making of a world government. It is stupid and against the Bible to contrast it. Yes, until we are in this world and are witnesses of the justice of Christ it is our duty to be the "salt" of the earth. Therefore, we should do our best so as to have no more mistreatment on children and to be on the side of the weak ones and report all injustices. For what concerns Margaret, everybody is free to do what they want: abortion, theft, kill, divorce, marry, everything we do we'll have to answer to God for it. Wanting to impose things to which God gives no value in His Plan is a waste of time. You follow New Age, you believe in re-incarnation, all things that according to the Bible are false, useless and harmful. There's people who believe in extra-terrestrials and tell many lies so as to support their theory. Yes, angels exist and are "extra-terrestrials" in a certain way but I don't know who those fanatics are that talk about but they cannot be included in any context of the Bible. All these theories definitely have a meaning and a role that is not yet clear but it's obvious they are opening the way to the mountain of lies the Antichrist will fill the world with. Who will have "no oil in their lamp", i.e. those who do not know the Bible will definitely be conned: *"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but having itching ears, they shall heap to themselves teachers in accordance with their own lusts. And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned toward fables. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill thy ministry."* (II Tim. 4:3-5). New Age, re-incarnation, extra-terrestrials all seem to fit perfectly with the words of Paul the Apostle and you Margaret - no offence - are strange enough a living prophecy come true". Margaret disagrees and replies to Zaderk in anger: "You're a dreamer! You don't realise how society is evolving. The Christian faith, believing in a personal God is anachronistic, science is making gigantic steps; the cloning of human cells will enable us to cure very important diseases. Man's secret powers have been suffocated and hidden by Christianity. You and the other Christians like you and all religious fanatics think we should feel guilty for everything, that we should face an hypothetical God tailor-made for mankind, perfect for those in a position of power in the church. Your opinion makes you believe we are the only ones in the universe. Who knows how many other galaxies like ours there are in the universe!" Mohamed, the Imam intervenes: "We should all take one step back and try to find what points we have in common. All religions can be valid if they are fair, respectful and rational. Everyone is his own judge and Allah is great. He looks into one's heart and will appraise the works of each one of us so that one can be saved. Terrorists are the consequence of a warped vision of Islam and the Koran; the key is mutual tolerance and understanding. An Islamic cannot accept to have Christ imposed as his God nor should he undergo proselytism. Every religion has the right to exist and not be put under pressure." Zaderk for whom evangelisation is now his way of living feels involved once more and begins by replying to Margaret: "I'm amazed of how superficially the reality of mankind, the vastness of the universe, the complexity of the human body, its ability to communicate, express feelings and have a conscience are evaluated. All these things cannot have come out from nowhere; they must have been created. Science teaches us that everything tends to stay the way it is. Yes, you may reply once more, how can you say that your God is the real one? And once more I will say that my God is the one of the Bible, the only one who predicted the future and that has a clear Plan, a simple tool for mankind with a logical explanation for each aspect of our existence. For what concerns cloning, I believe this scientific objective has a "subconscious" target that will be used as foreseen in a passage of Revelation: *"And I stood upon the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and*

upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw that one of his heads was, as it were, wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshiped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like unto the beast? Who is able to make war with him?" (Rev. 13:1-4) "And the woman whom thou sawest is that great city which reigneth over the kings of the earth." (Rev. 17:18).

According to the prophecies the Antichrist will die and resurrect during the 7-year Tribulation and this without the help of God can be possible, humanly speaking, only through cloning. Technology through Internet or its evolution will make another prophecy of Revelation come true: *"And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause to be killed as many as would not worship the image of the beast. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand or in their foreheads, that no man might buy or sell save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom: Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred threescore and six." (Rev. 13:15.18)*". The new computer operating systems will completely personalise users. Therefore, every commercial activity and every client will be codified and for making purchases we will have to be codified in the name of transaction safety. However, this will enable total control on the attitude of the users and when the Antichrist, the "controller" par excellence, will take power it will be a piece of cake for him to address all technologies to satisfy his needs for control. undeniably, now, already due to terrorism, all governments have agreed that the use of the force "above" the law is justified against certain terrorist activities. By justifying murders, when the Antichrist will come to power he will establish also that being a Christian active in Evangelising is subversive and destabilising and maybe using different terms he will make the following prophecy come true: *"And it was given unto him to make war with the saints and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations." (Rev. 13:7)*. The Imam says things that are apparently right but only apparently because what he says would be valid if God were not a God with a precise plan and precise laws. The words of the Imam express a human justice that is very much spread but they do not give any certainties or securities and, more than anything, are based on a wrong relationship with a distant, impersonal, faded and imprecise God. This God expects rituals and sacrifices, all things the God of the Bible says are useless: *"But go ye and learn what this meaneth: 'I will have mercy and not sacrifice.' For I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." (Mat 9:13)*. For those who wish to object this quotation that erases rituals, takes away all meanings from the works to be done to reach salvation by quoting the Old Testament, the Law and the Rabbi's tradition, the Christian answer is that as Jesus Christ is God and he came to complete the Law *"Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill." (Mat. 5:17)*, He has the authority to change the relationship with God. This also because if His Spirit lives in mankind, we ourselves become the Temple of God: *"What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you and which ye have from God, and that ye are not your own?" (I Cor. 6:19)*.

Then he replies to the Imam: "the aim of developing brotherhood among people and religions is basically utopistic and hypocritical just like during ecumenical meetings everybody agrees to put up with each other but then everyone makes proselytism to gain an advantage on the others. Real Christianity does not make proselytism but gives information on salvation through Christ; all the rest is the business of who receives this information and God. Furthermore, brotherhood cost what may have no correspondence with the message of Christ". But how was Islam born? Islam means submit to peace and it was born with Mohammed its prophet who was named as prophet by a wise Christian of Mecca, Waraka Ibn Nawafal. After having had a vision of Angel Gabriel, the wise man said Mohammed was the long-awaited prophet. The Islamic religion considers as prophets also

Abraham (Ibrahim), Moses (Musa), Jesus (Isa) and all the prophets of the Old Testament. Abraham is the most important because it was he who placed the black sacred stone in Mecca, the stone around which all Mecca pilgrims turn.

Mohammed was born in 570 A.D. in Mecca and was illiterate. His parents died when he was young and he was brought up by his uncle Abu Talib whose son Ali is the spiritual leader of "Shiites" who represent 10% of Muslims while the remaining 90% are "Sunnites". Abu Bakr, friend and companion of Mohammed was the spiritual leader of Sunnites. The guide of Sunnite Muslims is the "Khalif" whilst that of Shiites is the Mullah. Muslims who flagellate themselves are usually Shiites who hit their chest as they were not able to defend Hussein from death, Ali's only son during a battle in 680 A.D. Sunnites are no friends of Shiites and still make war to each other like before. Mohammed died in Medina on 8th June 632. The Koran which means read, declaim is made of 114 chapters named "sure" that were collected by Uthman, the third Khalif. The Koran was given to Mohammed by Angel Gabriel, who appeared to him as a great light, during 23 years. The Koran was not written in its current order but begins with the opening prayer that glorifies all prophets not only Mohammed. The Muslim age begins in 622, year 1 of Hegira from the verb hagara that means emigrate. As Arabic is the language of the Koran and the Koran is considered as the Word of God, Mohammed revealed the Word and, therefore, Arabic is considered as the language of God.

Islam has 5 main points:

1. Witness faith. There is only one God: Allah and Mohammed is his prophet. A Muslim must pronounce these words.
2. You must pray five times a day. First at dawn, then when the sun is high, then in mid-afternoon, then at dusk and finally at night. Before praying you must wash yourself.
3. Fast: for one month during Ramadan no Muslim can eat from dawn to dusk.
4. Charity: a part of your earnings has to be given to the poor.
5. Pilgrimage to Mecca. At least once in his life, a good Muslim has to go to Mecca until Medina.

It is neither constructive nor good mannered to say that what someone believes in is false. The task of a Christian is to expose his arguments by circumstantiating them, leaving the counterpart reflection and decision based on the exposed facts. It is evident that there is one basic difference between the Islamic and the Christian religion, namely that in the Islamic religion God asks man to die for him while in the Christian religion God comes to die for His creatures in order to grant him eternal life, free of charge.

Zaderk and Simon found more enemies in the so-called "Christian" world than in the Muslim one. Sometimes one meets paladins of their religion who literally insult all those who do not comply to the doctrine of their "movement". However, these clashes are never on the contents of the Bible. Tradition is opposed to the text or the topic becomes quarrelsome and arguments are based upon: "Everybody says, everybody thinks, it has been so for centuries, who are you? There's just a few of you! We are the real Church". Without taking into account that almost 50% of the USA population says they are born again and that 75% say that Christ will be back. The example of Christ was to expose His role according to the word of God. Now, 2000 years later, the basis of evangelisation has not changed: we must expose the role of Christ and only His one in the personal life of mankind according to the Bible (and forget about sanctuaries, dead or living people who, though are examples, do not save or make miracles; they cannot operate today).

The Muslim faith is based on the vision Mohammed had of Angel Gabriel. Also Mormons and Jehovah's Witnesses have had leaders who had visions and revelations. Jesus Christ did not make revelations. He is God made man. Christ God revealed to man, is made of the "same substance of the father" as usually said during the Mass; if it were not so, he would be an impostor. He cannot be a prophet as a prophet is man and a man does not save just as Mary the mother of Jesus does not

save, although she is the Virgin Mary she had other children as all other Jewish women: *“Is not this the carpenter’s son? Is not his mother called Mary and his brethren James and Joseph, and Simon and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us? From whence then hath this man all these things?”* And they were offended at Him. But Jesus said unto them, *“A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country and in his own house.”*” (Mat.13:55-57) (the catholic world says the words brothers and sisters here are cousin) but as for Jews fertility is a blessing while sterility is a curse, the “adoring” of virginity is a concept more of the pagan world than of the Christian one. In any case, a man cannot die in the place of someone else. Christ came in this world after dozen of prophecies on his coming and left other prophecies saying he will be back for His Church. During the Mass we repeat: *“we proclaim your resurrection while awaiting your return”*. If we thought a little more about words, we would realise that life for Christians is based on the return of Jesus. In this period Saints are very much in vogue but the word Saint means separate and is granted to God because He is separate from sin. In the same way, believers, born again, have been washed of their sins with the blood of Christ and are themselves saints: *“Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints who are in all Achaia: Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.”* (II Cor. 1:1-2) *“Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, To the saints who are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus.”*(Eph. 1:1). It is clear that saint is an alternative name for Christian. Therefore, worshipping dead people is idolatry; moreover, as they are dead they cannot do anything; it is only an idolatrous deviation from truth as only God – to whom we can access through the Holy Spirit – through the work of Jesus Christ, the only intermediate for the redemption and annulment of the sins of man, can answer prayers and can make miracles. The Bible also says that Satan is strong enough to make miracles: *“even him, whose coming is according to the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all the deceit of unrighteousness in those who perish, because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.”* (II Tes. 2:9-10). So, all those who believe in miracles and recoveries are idolaters? No, because God is strong and can make miracles – first of all conversion and redemption of sinners – but in any case anything that leads to glory in any way to someone or something that is not Jesus Christ is not for us Christians something of God but of Satan. Satan wants that mankind believes in anything but Christ as only and personal Saviour. In a hypothetical courthouse in which Satan is the Public Attorney, saved Man must be able to say until he is alive that if accused Christ can elevate as his lawyer: *“My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.”* (I John. 2:1-2). If God acquitted a sinner He should also acquit Satan because God is fair: *“The LORD is slow to anger and great in power, and will not at all acquit the wicked. The LORD hath His way in the whirlwind and in the storm, and the clouds are the dust of His feet.”* (Nahum 1:3). This is why the Christian religion is different from others as it is the only religion that apart from declaring beforehand what will happen in the world and to the people of Israel, is the only religion in which the Creator of the universe came to die in the place of His human being for love, in order to save him from eternal condemnation: *“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.”* (Rev. 20:13-14). So, if there is a second death, this means there is also a first death, i.e. physical death but if someone believes in Christ as personal Saviour, one passes from death to life the moment in which one makes his act of faith; from that moment on, one has eternal life: *“Verily, verily I say unto you, he that heareth My Word and believeth in Him that sent Me, hath everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation”* (so who believes cannot die a second time – author’s note), *but is passed from death unto life.* (John. 5:24)” – *“ Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth in Me hath everlasting life.”* (John. 6:47). At this point we can say that: “who has eternal life don’t really care!” Those who hesitate, those who say it is too easy, those wavering, those who are insecure or say they do not

deserve so much grace say that God is a liar, that the death of Jesus was in vain and useless. The nails in the wrists of Jesus, the spear in His ribs, His agonizing death on the cross was real pain. The death of Jesus was a real death; if we do not catch the salvation of Jesus through faith we disregard His sacrifice. Also wanting to obtain salvation through worthy works is wanting to diminish the act of Christ as we are saved through grace not through works: *“And if by grace, then it is no longer by works; otherwise grace is no longer grace. But if it be by works, then it is no longer grace; otherwise work is no longer work.”* (Rom. 11-6). Wanting to add works to grace is a sin; works are the result of faith, works do not save: *“Now to him that worketh, his reward is reckoned not according to grace, but according to debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth in Him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is accounted for righteousness.”* (Rom. 4:4-5). Due to this wonderful reality, there are people who say it is too easy but it is so and in any case, as we are talking about the living God we cannot make fun of Him. There are other two aspects we should probably take into account due to the Bible, namely celibacy and fasting. First of all, celibacy is not a condition for serving the Lord: *“This is a true saying: If a man desire the office of bishop, he desireth a good work. A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behavior, given to hospitality, apt at teaching; not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; one who ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all dignity (for if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)”* (I Tim. 3:1-5). Actually, through Paul, the Lord tells us to beware of religious organisations that forbid matrimony: *“Now the Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused if it be received with thanksgiving; for it is sanctified by the Word of God and prayer.”* (I Tim. 4:1-5). Therefore, who forbids matrimony and orders fasting follows the doctrines of demons; they are people who have defied faith, they are apostates. (apostasy = rebellion, denial, dismissal).

“When Jesus came into the region of Caesarea Philippi, He asked His disciples, saying, “Who do men say that I, the Son of Man, am?” And they said, “Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets.” He said unto them, “But who say ye that I am?” And Simon Peter answered and said, “Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.” And Jesus answered and said unto him, “Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father who is in Heaven. And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. And whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in Heaven.”” (Mat 16:13-19).

Main differences between the view a carnal view that supports the figure of a Human head by referring to Matthew 16 and that one of a spiritual point of view	
The Human carnal view	The Spiritual view
Peter is the reference man. He is the stone according to a materialistic vision that puts man at the centre of the universe.	The stone is Peter's statement that says Jesus is Christ.
Carnal Christianity. Interpretation of the Bible made by man; beginning of a pontifical dynasty. Allegoric interpretation of the prophecies and the content of the Bible; common believers delegate "exegeses" to understand it.	Spiritual Christianity: the Bible is interpreted by the Holy Ghost present in the mind of believers. Literal interpretation of the prophecies and contents of the Bible: every believer must access to God through the Bible and has to personally verify every teaching.
Ecclesial stratification, human hierarchies. The concept that a priest is the means between man and God taken from the Old Testament.	All believers are at the same level; they face God through the only intermediate, i.e. Christ, the only Priest.
Confused vision of the Church compared to Israel. The Catholic Church and others consider as theirs the promises made to Israel. Wars, crusades, prevarication, carnal evaluation of results. Carnal Christians believe the promises made by God to Israel on material results were made for them. This is why throughout the centuries in the so-called "Christian" environments there was the presumption to say that acts of war or dominations were made under God's will.	Coherent vision of separate identities and roles of the Church and Israel. Each spiritual element has a different destiny and future. The characteristic of this vision is tolerance towards our neighbours, a deep study of the Bible, knowledge and simple proposal of the "Good News". The Church is God's "Scent" in this world and its only purpose is to be evidence of the contents of the Plan of God.
According to a carnal and materialistic view, the purpose of a Christian is to build on earth the reign of God.	According to a spiritual vision, the purpose of a Christian is to make others know how to access God's salvation as well as the knowledge of the Plan of God according to which the reign of God will be made by Christ Himself following a precise sequence of events.

MATTHEW 24, JESUS REPLIES TO HIS DISCIPLES ON THE MOMENT OF THE END

Jesus is speaking to his disciples, i.e. is talking to the rising Church. He is revealing something important so that believers will be informed.

Below the text is made into a scheme and translated into modern words mixed with the original verses in order to translate what is indicated in the verses in the clearest and most readable language possible.

Jesus makes a prophetic speech full of details and recommendations. He wants to inform us on future events regarding Israel and all mankind.

1. The disciples point out the beauty of the Temple
And Jesus went out and departed from the temple, and His disciples came to Him to show Him the buildings of the temple.
2. Jesus predicts the Temple of Jerusalem will be destroyed
And Jesus said unto them, "See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down."
3. The disciples ask: what will be the sign of your coming and the end of the present era?
And as He sat upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples came unto Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of Thy coming and of the end of the world?"
4. Jesus replies: beware of confusion and don't be seduced
And Jesus answered and said unto them, "Take heed that no man deceive you;
5. Many will declare to come in the name (onoma) of Jesus, to be His representatives, with the same authority and they will declare to be Christ. Many will believe them.
for many shall come in My name, saying, 'I am Christ,' and shall deceive many.
6. There will be wars and rumours of war. We needn't worry about this because it is necessary but it won't be the end.
And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that ye be not troubled, for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.
7. The souls of the nations will rise against other nations as they want to leave their present condition for a new one. Reigns will rise (ethnos = ethno= race) against other reigns; there will be famines and earthquakes.
For nation shall rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom, and there shall be famines and pestilences and earthquakes in divers places.
8. This is only the beginning of pain (the word used for pain is the same used for women in labour as if these events were necessary to start after something more important).
All these are the beginning of sorrows.
9. There will be a tribulation and persecution of Christian believers. They will be hated because of the evidence of Jesus.
Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted and shall kill you, and ye shall be hated by all nations for My name's sake.
10. Many will be scandalised, deceive and hate each other.
And then shall many lose faith and shall betray one another and shall hate one another.
11. Many false prophets will rise and seduce many people
And many false prophets shall rise and shall deceive many.
12. wickedness and injustice will spread. Christian love will become colder.
And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.
13. Christians will have to tolerate patiently; in the end, those who will have endured will be saved (here we are not talking of salvation from hell but of the judgement on the works of a Christian who cannot be so if he is not saved by Christ. Obviously, salvation cannot be discussed).

- But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.*
14. The Gospel will be preached all over the world; all people of the world will receive the evidence of Christ. Then the end will come.
And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.
 15. There will be the abomination of desolation as referred to by Daniel the prophet - ... *One week he will make a strong agreement with many; and in the middle of the week he will make sacrifice and oblation stop; and on the wings of abomination a devastator will come; this until complete destruction – already decided – will fall over the devastator. - (Dan. 9:27)*
"When ye therefore shall see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (whoso readeth, let him understand),
 16. Those who are in Judea should run towards the mountains
then let them that be in Judea flee unto the mountains.
 17. You cannot go back to take any personal belonging
Let him that is on the housetop not come down to take anything out of his house;
 18. You cannot go back to the city through the fields.
neither let him that is in the field return back to take his clothes.
 19. The most damaged will be pregnant and breast-feeding women.
And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!
 20. We must pray this does not happen in winter.
But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day.
 21. There will be a terrible suffering as never seen before in this world.
For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.
 22. Those days will be made shorter in order to reduce the sufferings of believers.
And unless those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake, those days shall be shortened.
 23. Beware: do not believe he who will proclaim to be the Messiah.
Then if any man shall say unto you, 'Lo, here is Christ,' or 'there,' believe it not.
 24. There will be false Christ's and false prophets who will be able to give strong signs and make great prodigies. They will seduce everyone but believers.
For there shall arise false Christs and false prophets and shall show great signs and wonders, insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.
 25. Jesus repeats He does not believe in the announcement of a man people say is the Messiah.
Behold, I have told you before.
 26. Again: do not believe in the false Messiah.
Therefore, if they shall say unto you, 'Behold, He is in the desert!' go not forth; or 'Behold, He is in the secret chambers!' believe it not.
 27. Because the coming of Jesus will be as evident as the lightning that you see from east to west.
For as the lightning cometh out of the east and shineth even unto the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.
 28. Where there will be heaps of corpses there will be the eagles.
For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the vultures be gathered together.
 29. After affliction, the sun will darken, the moon will stop shining, the stars will fall, the forces of the sky will be shaken.
"Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken,
 30. Jesus will appear with great power and glory and all races will apologise.

- and then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven. And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and with great glory.*
31. All believers will be gathered from all sides of the skies.
And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.
32. We must learn from the example of the fig tree. When we see the leaves, we know summer is coming.
"Now learn a parable of the fig tree: When his branch is yet tender and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh.
33. When we see these things, Jesus will be approaching.
So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.
34. This generation will not pass before these things have happened.
Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass till all these things be fulfilled.
35. Jesus confirms what He says is the truth.
Heaven and earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away.
36. No-one but the Father knows the day and time.
But of that day and hour, knoweth no man, no, not the angels of Heaven, but My Father only.
37. The return of Jesus will be similar to the time of the flood.
But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.
38. Also at that time everyone took care only of their own business.
For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark
39. Nobody noticed anything until the flood swept everybody away. The same will happen at the return of Christ.
and knew not until the flood came and took them all away, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.
40. One will be taken and one will be freed.
Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken and the other left.
41. One person will be taken and one will be freed.
Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken and the other left.
42. We must be very careful. We must look out because we do not know when Jesus will come back.
"Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.
43. If one knew when the Lord were back he would look out.
But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched and would not have suffered his house to be broken into.
44. Also we have to be ready because we do not know when the Lord will be back.
Therefore be ye also ready, for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of Man cometh.
45. Who is the careful servant?
"Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?"
46. Blessed is he who will be found waiting for the Lord.
Blessed is that servant whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing.
47. The Lord will assign him important responsibilities.
Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.
48. But the believer who says the Lord will not come for some time.
But if that evil servant shall say in his heart, 'My lord delayeth his coming,'
49. And starts acting as an unbeliever.
and shall begin to smite his fellow servants and to eat and drink with the drunken,

50. The Lord will come for him when he least expects it.
the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,
51. That believer will be treated as an hypocrite.
and shall cut him asunder and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.....

It is amazing to see how Christ has no fear to expose future episodes and events. The many details and the sequence of events is typical of divine exposition of future facts.

In the present society as in the past ones there are many mystics, fortune tellers, people predicting the future based on who knows what revelation or premonitory power.

There are even people studying the prophecies of Nostradamus that are no prophecies; one could say whatever he wants on those quatrains. In any case, and this is my personal opinion, I believe that the prophecies of Nostradamus were inspired by Satan who is “the prince of this world” and like every good conman is able to make at least some prophecies become true just to con mankind. God allows this to put human beings to the test.

A believer is no referee, he is only a witness of what he has understood is real, of what God, the living God, has confirmed in his life. Understanding the Bible is subordinated to the presence of the Spirit of God in the person studying it. For all others, it is an insurmountable wall and though some may work hard in reading, studying and thinking over it, their brain just does not take but a few sterile notions. The Spirit of God enters only in those who let Him in. We must state in our prayers to this living God that we recognise Him as the Lord, that His death on the Cross was because of our sin. Therefore, we ask the Spirit of God to come and take control of our mind. A mind without God tends to examine everything to demonstrate that what one says to believe in is true. A mind with the Spirit of God inside searches for the truth and has the necessary requirements for recognising it.

For those who have faith it is normal and natural to believe that God knows the future. How this can be a believer cannot understand. My personal opinion as a computer expert is that if God is the inventor of the universe, life and matter and was able to invent everything only by exploiting three elements, i.e. Electron, Proton and Neutron, He is also able to carry out “global simulations” in order to scientifically calculate each and every aspect of the universe. For instance, the power of calculation in the simulation of God is able to establish in the year 1000 where a leaf falling from a tree in the year 2000 will land. If He is able to create a chromosome from nothing, it will be a piece of cake for Him to calculate every event, circumstance or reaction in the space of 1000 years. If God is the source of every knowledge, knowing the future is part of His nature. In the same way, it is part of our nature not to know Him if not through what God Himself reveals us. And as God has revealed us the future through Christ and the prophets, the only thing left to do is to go and search and if we have any doubt just check through historical facts. But if also after having seen that our arguments have no ground if compared to those of the Bible we continue insisting on our positions of incredulity, the Bible says that the wrath of God “will stay” above us: “(John. 3:36).

See table page 185

FINAL CONSIDERATIONS

If we have been wise enough to read this book carefully without prejudice or preconceived notion, if we give a chance to the message of the Bible as exposed in these pages we can reach a logical conclusion, i.e. science does not differ with the Plan of God. This can be seen if we actually read carefully scientific data on a mathematical as well as physics base and analyse the possibility of “chance” related to the fundamental facts of the universe such as biological life, spiritual activity, differences among species, DNA, psychological activities, spiritual activities, feelings and conscience. A mathematical analysis accepting as by chance the great number of events that have generated the present situation of life in this world makes the “chance” case become absurd both under a theoretical and practical point of view.

So, the explanation of the Plan of God starts from an intimate, personal and radical experience, i.e. the work the Holy Ghost has done in my heart and in my brain.

Briefly, we can say that the fact God exists and is the creator of all things, has made all things in a logical manner following a precise and defined strategy in different phases and according to a precise plot. Man gets this but does not understand it if he does not accept the message of Christ contained in the Bible. Man feels to be eternal, to be part of a greater design but if he doesn't find a way out, he runs and gets stuck in strange theories, he searches strong and emotional sensations, he wants to believe in incredible supernatural things without realising that the sky is the result of a formidable event; the sun, mountains, sea, our body, our mind, the fact we exist is a unique and formidable event. We human beings are spectacular events. How many of us ever stop and think on how special a human being is? Think, reason, sing, speak, live. All these are wonderful things the importance of which is appreciated only when we lose them. But society is full of hate, vanity and falseness; it makes us believe the opposite stopping us from enjoying what we have.

The terrorist attack on the towers fits perfectly within the biblical context of preparation to the events mentioned by the prophets in the Bible. Obviously, the event itself is not mentioned in the Bible because specific events occurring during the age of grace – i.e. from the period of Jesus up to His return for taking the Church (this period) – are not mentioned. There is however a brief description of the situation before the return of Jesus as already seen in Matthew 24 and as we can see in the passages of Paul: “(II Tim. 3:1-5)” and Peter: “(II Pietro 3:9-10)”.

Society degeneration is a physiological and necessary fact as foreseen in the Bible. Moreover, we have a clear vision of the future situation under a political, economic and religious point of view during the seven years of tribulation. As everything regarding mankind, the making of that condition will be gradual; society has to go through all changes that will determine the situation described by God in the Bible. But there must be some traumatic events acting as catalysers and starting specific evolutionary processes. Therefore, the attack on the towers could be easily considered as the final bend before the straight leading us to a time goal that for us believers is the taking of the Church whilst for non-believers is the tribulation under the dominion of the Antichrist.

The new condition in which society is now after the attack on the WTC is making certain situations mentioned by the prophets in the Bible happen. To be clear: we can say that we are witnessing the making of the framework of a building representing the society described in Revelation and in the other prophecies of the Bible. The Islamic world has lost credibility especially the integralist side; it has forced the western world to intervene and wonder about the poorest part of the world; it has induced the “post-Christian” religious world to look for the brotherhood of other religions more than ever before, therefore creating the foundations for a global religious movement. The attack has demolished in one go the security and role of the United States as superpower; it has made them inadequate for maintaining the peace in the Islamic countries; it has opened the way and shaken the European Union, obliging it to improve their status under a strategic-military point of view – let's not forget that the Antichrist comes from Europe.

War against terrorism has accelerated the Israeli-Palestinian crisis, offering to the Jews the chance to humiliate Palestinians by creating a situation impossible to sustain for Palestinian people. This

attitude will make Israel be hated by the world's public opinion, especially in Europe that is worried more about its own interests in the Arab countries than of Palestinian people.

Again, the attack has brought to an increase in the financial control systems thus creating the foundations for the making of a new economical system in which nothing will be bought or sold without the 666 "government" trademark described in chapter 13 of Revelation.

Moreover, the attack has caused a further growth of the "post-Christian" sentiment of the western society that refuses the literal interpretation of the Bible. The struggle and refusal of Islamic integralism from people who do not know Christ makes them consider at the same level faith in the Bible and faith in the Koran. The fear of a reaction by the Islamic world makes them denigrate and suffocate the evangelistic spirit. The only space left for Christianity is superficial and does not lead anywhere; it is an emptiness linked to emotions, great ecumenical events reduced of importance by "peace, cost what may" ; in other words, the world religion described in chapter 17 of Revelation as the prostitute.

But within the faith in Christ there is no "demilitarised zone"; you either fight hard for the Gospel or you are enemies of Christ.

Finally, the struggle against terrorism makes individual control systems become more sophisticated and, therefore, establishes the foundations for the system described in chapter 13 of Revelation in which mankind is obliged to worship "the image of the beast". The beast will be able to understand whether a person is obeying and is subdued to the law imposed by the "false Prophet", the beast coming from under the earth "(Apoc. 13:15). On the other hand, it is clear for everyone that we are living in the age of "image".

The system will be an integration of ground control systems towards cell phones, satellites and Internet systems.

After 11th September 2001, the world is willing to accept without any problem to be under control but as usual when dealing with human beings, something created for good purposes is used against mankind when the leader is an obnoxious and loathsome creature such as the Antichrist.

Euro, the single European currency is another great step towards the integration of the great government that will dominate the world's political and military scene, a government made of iron and clay whose roots are deep in the Roman Empire, kept together by interests. Therefore, considering these facts who can feel calm? Only those to whom this promise is made: "(Mat. 10:28-30)". The knowledge of God, the waiting for His return gives an unstoppable internal strength and a basic serenity totally separated from circumstances. This is not due to "autogenous training" but to the presence of the Holy Ghost. Those who do not have the Spirit are afraid of these things. The evidence present in this book produces a result described by Paul the Apostle two-thousand years ago: "(II Cor. 2:15-16)".

The "end of the world" will not happen the way those who do not know the Bible well think, with a sudden and global catastrophe but as usual for God in a gradual manner with the necessary information and description of the events. The taking of the Church will definitely be sudden but that is not the end of the world, it is the last great alarm before the judgements. At that point, there will be still more than seven years to go; the end of this age will be clear. There will be the taking of the Church, followed by an intermediate period during which the Antichrist will rise to power, then he will sign a seven year peace and security agreement with Israel that will represent the beginning of the seven-year Tribulation during which the world will be judged and put to the test. Tribulation will end with the return of Christ into glory together with all believers of all time.

If this explanation may seem absurd, it is never as absurd as expecting a mono-cellular amoeba to change into a red cell or human chromosome but most human beings believe in this whilst in facts, attitudes and behaviour they do not believe God exists.

For those who see in this book an attack to the Catholic and Islamic world as well as to non-Christian religions, if he/she considers this opinion as presumptuous, subjective and arbitrary I invite them to "check the Bible, not another person, however worthy they may be, as they are not the Bible. Study the text and verify whether there is any contradiction with what I've explained by

applying the fundamental rule for interpreting the Bible, i.e. when the simple meaning of the Scripture makes sense – according to common sense – do not look for another meaning; just take each word in its main literal meaning unless the facts in an immediate context, should indicate different”.

If we read this chapter before the “taking of the Church” it may at first appear as paranoiac, fanatical, hot-headed and intimidating. But the concept of the return of Christ is known also in the catholic world as “parousia” though common interpretation links it to the judgement whilst the Last Judgement will happen at the end of the 1000 year long reign of Christ. Believers will not be judged: “*Verily, verily I say unto you, he that heareth My Word and believeth in Him that sent Me, hath everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed from death unto life.*”(John. 5:24) - “*Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth in Me hath everlasting life.*”(John. 6:47). This verse does not mean that we only need to believe in something to be saved; the context from which this is taken talks about Jesus as Christ who grants eternal life. Therefore, it is clear that only those who believe in Christ before dying will have eternal life... And the others? The others no. They will be judged and then condemned: “*He that believeth in the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.*” (John 3:36). This is the spiritual reality of the Gospel unless one wants to give a different meaning to what is written. Therefore, all those that do not consider Christ as the expiation of our sins are out once and for all. This goes especially for Jehovah’s Witnesses who do not recognise Christ as God and all those who say that salvation is “earned”, therefore erasing the efficacy of the sacrifice of Christ who saves through grace not through works: “*And if by grace, then it is no longer by works; otherwise grace is no longer grace. But if it be by works, then it is no longer grace; otherwise work is no longer work.*” (Rom. 11:6). If God made these words get to us today, it is because He wants to save everyone, play all cards. If due to these considerations it sounds logical to believe that Christ is God and that He is listening to us now, it is also logical to stop, pray and call Jesus as our saviour. To hell dogmas, material duties and fears about “what shall I say now!” And what about Papuans? Will I have to go to church every Sunday? God died on the cross not to make us sterile bigot puppets who go to church every given Sunday morning or evening but to give us eternal life and an exuberant life in this world: “*The thief cometh not but to steal and to kill and to destroy. I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. I am the Good Shepherd; the Good Shepherd giveth His life for the sheep.*”(John 10:10-11). If we recognise that Christ is alive – and we’ve not done it yet – let us call his name today because we do not know when He will be back: “*Heaven and earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away. But of that day and hour, knoweth no man, no, not the angels of Heaven, but My Father only. But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.*” (Mat. 24:35-37). We are talking of the taking of the Church and we know that Christ will return as the liberator of Israel: this will happen at Armageddon after the seven-year tribulation while here we are talking of a sudden coming that nobody expects or is able to establish when it will happen: “*But of that day and that hour knoweth no man--no, not the angels who are in Heaven, neither the Son, but only the Father. Take ye heed, watch and pray; for ye know not when the time is.*” (Mar. 13:32-33). Human imbecility sees what was written in the Bible centuries ago happening in front of their eyes. We see people’s lives changing and do not ask ourselves why. We under-evaluate the return of Christ; we ridicule it and then we walk along singing “when the saints, go marching in, I want to be in that number” which means that when the “saints” will march towards the sky I want to be part of it. When in the USA there is a spectacular or catastrophic event, newspapers use the so-called “Second Coming Type” character, i.e. “The Character of the Second Coming”. In that country where the knowledge of the Bible is a common thing, it is not strange to think of the return of Christ as a normal thing to believe in.

THE SUMMARISED CHRONOLOGICAL SCHEME OF THE 7 YEARS OF TRIBULATION

CHRONOLOGY of the book of Revelation – the Revelation of Jesus Christ

Introduction:

The book of Revelation has 22 chapters and is the revelation of Jesus Christ for what He is, i.e. the King that wins death, evil and the enemy of God and mankind, i.e. Satan. The book was written by John the Apostle around 95 A.D. when he was an exile in the isle of Patmos.

Revelation is the book of the Bible that completes all information regarding the prophecies on the Plan of God. It describes in detail all future events of mankind.

It is basically the last book of the Bible, maybe the most important one for what concerns prophecies and understanding of the Plan of God, and is subdivided into 5 parts:

1. Letter to the seven churches of Asia. This means that God uses John, the author of the book, to reveal to the Church what will happen. This part has a double role: on the one hand, it states that if we are not part of the body of Jesus Christ, i.e. of the Church, we cannot understand the message of the revelation of Jesus Christ; on the other hand, it contains the prophecies on the spiritual phases the Church will undergo through the ages. Chapters 1 to 3.
2. The achievement of the divine authority of Christ in this world. Chapters 4 and 5.
3. The seven-year Tribulation described through events and judgements starting with the opening of the first seal, the white horse ridden by the Antichrist with the arch with no arrows. He gets to power without war. The white horse seems as if he has usurped the role of Christ. The period ends with Jesus who comes riding on a white horse followed by His armies. There will be no battle and Tribulation will end. Chapters 6 to 19.
4. The one-thousand-year reign governed by Jesus Christ at the end of which there will be the last rebellion of mankind, the opening of the books and the Last Judgement for those who do not have Christ's salvation. Chapter 20.
5. Eternal life with God in the new skies and new world; the final accomplishment of the Plan of God. Chapters 21 and 22.

This way of seeing things may seem crazy nowadays. However, we must say that according to mankind's common sense also God's creation of the universe, his incarnation in Jesus Christ through the conception of the virgin Mary by the Holy Ghost, the resurrection of Christ, the Bible itself as the Word of God and – finally – the Holy Ghost inside those believers who have accepted Christ as saviour is crazy. The problem for common people is that they cannot understand things concerning God until He Himself does not reveal them and due to this revelation mankind decides to accept them through faith. Revelation occurs through the Church and through the Bible. Like in the past, also today God does not reveal things about Him through spectacular visions, phenomenal miracles, "prophets" experiencing "visions". He will use those who have His Spirit as well as the Scriptures, i.e. He will use evangelisation. A Christian has to study the book of Revelation carefully and he/she will receive great blessing and a unique joy. If one is not a believer, he must know he has no other means for reaching God but the name of Jesus Christ. Believers are the Evidence of what they have believed; they refer to what the Spirit has taught them in the peace and power of the knowledge of the Plan of God. We must learn to distinguish whether or not a message comes from God. If the message brought to us gives glory exclusively to Jesus, if the attention is exclusively towards Jesus the Lord and not towards an organisation, a name, a congregation, a present or past person, this message comes from God. If for achieving salvation or for being a good believer we are told to do certain things or demonstrate we have specific spiritual charisma we should not take any notice of it! Nowadays anyone can establish a direct relationship with the living God; we only need

to call Him in our prayers, to recognise our sins and call for His salvation because when Christ died on the cross he paid for our sins so we can no longer be condemned: “For *whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.*” (Rom. 10:13). Human existence is not only those few months we call life in which we are here today and forgotten tomorrow; in which people run after the wind trying to accumulate goods they will never spend, trying to enjoy something that never really fully satisfies us, always searching new sensations and experiences that stimulate new emotions; we fight for an idea, for our pleasure, our objectives; we fight to assert ourselves. Then we die. This is not life, each one of us is an eternal being.

THE 7 CHURCHES

The second and third chapter of Revelation contain a message to the seven churches of Asia that represent the seven different phases of the Church of Christ throughout the centuries from Pentecost to the present age. In order to understand this concept it is better to look at the scheme. The Church will not enter into Tribulation, believers who will convert during tribulation will be identified as “The Saints of Tribulation”.

The Church was founded by Jesus so that it could witness that Jesus is God and that salvation occurs only through Him.

*Approaching Christ cost nothing, following Christ cost something, serving Christ cost everything –
Dr. M.R.DeHaan*

	Ephesus	Smyrna	Pergamum
Period	30 - 100 A.D.	100 – 312 A.D.	312 – 606 A.D.
Characteristics	The Apostolic church	The Persecuted church	The indulgent church
Praise and recommendations	Commitment, Constancy, Patience and hate for the works of Nicolaitans	Commitment, tribulation and poverty	Consider the name of Jesus firmly. He has not denied his faith
Condemnation	Left the first love	NONE	Has false masters of Balaam and Nicolaitans
Advice	Remember where you have fallen from and come to your senses	Have no fear, be faithful	Come to senses
The challenge of Jesus ... winner takes all	I'll give food from the tree of life	He will not be touched by the second death	I will give hidden manna and white stone on which a new name will be written

	Thyatira	Sardis	Philadelphia	Laodicea
Period	606 A.D. Entering into Tribulation	1520 A.D. Entering into Tribulation	1750 A.D. Taking of the Church	1900 A.D. Entering into Tribulation
Characteristics	The Pagan Church	The Dead Church	The Church loved by Christ	The Tepid Church
Praise and recommendations	Good deeds, love, service, faith and patience	Commitment, you are hungry for life	Commitment, Missions, little strength. He kept his Word, he did not renege the name of Jesus	NONE
Condemnation	Allowed Jezebel to teach idolatry and compromise	Being dead, incomplete job	NONE	Tepid, Unhappy, Miserable, Poor, Blind and Naked
Advice	Hold on tight to what you have until I'll be there	Beware. Remember what you have received and heard; store it and come to senses	Hold on tight to what you have.	Buy from Jesus gold refined with fire and eyewash so that he can see. Be zealous and repent.
The challenge of Jesus ... winner takes all	I'll give millenary power and the morning star	He will be dressed in white clothes and I will not cancel his name from the book of life	I'll make him a column in the temple of my God and I'll write my new name on him	I'll make him sit with me on my throne.

Rev. 1:16-20: *“And He had in His right hand seven stars, and out of His mouth went a sharp twoedged sword, and His countenance shone as the sun shineth in his strength. And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying unto me, “Fear not; I am the First and the Last. I am He that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen, and have the keys of hell and of death. Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter. The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in My right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks: the seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches.”*”

Message to the churches. Chapters 2 and 3

Ephesus A.D. 30 – 100 The Apostolic Church

Rev. 2:1-7 *“Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write: `These things saith He that holdeth the seven stars in His right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks: I know thy works and thy labor and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them that are evil; and how thou hast tried them that say they are apostles and are not, and hast found them liars; and hast borne, and hast patience, and for My name's sake hast labored and hast not fainted. Nevertheless, I have something against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent and do the works as at first; or else I will come unto thee quickly and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, unless thou repent. But this thou hast: that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans (a), which I also hate. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the Tree of Life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God.”*”

(a) Nicolaitans = They carried out sensual activities that separated the physical nature from the spiritual one thus granting themselves a license to sin. They tried to establish an ecclesiastical order.
Nicolaitanism = Attempt for establishing ecclesiastical hierarchies that in the local church make some turn the community into “spiritual slaves”.

Smyrna 100 – 312 A.D. The Persecuted Church

“And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write: `These things saith the First and the Last, who was dead and is alive: I know thy works and tribulation and poverty (but thou art rich), and I know the blasphemy of them that say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan (b). Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer. Behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, hat ye may be tried, and ye shall have tribulation ten days. Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of Life. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. He that overcometh shall not be hurt by the second death.””

(b) The Synagogue of Satan = Any so called church that preaches a Gospel different from that of Jesus Christ as the only living God and Saviour. Any false religion can be brought back to two basic heresies:

A – Reduction of the image of Christ by not recognising Him as born from the virgin Mary, not recognising Him as the Son of God who lived without sin, sacrificed Himself in our place, resurrected from His tomb and ascended up into the sky promising to physically return in this world.

B – Adding to salvation from faith, duties to carry out specific works or rituals, eat or do not eat certain type of food.

Pergamos 312 – 606 A.D. The Indulgent Church

Apoc. 2:12 *“And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write: `These things saith He that hath the sharp sword with two edges: I know thy works and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is; and that thou holdest fast My name and hast not denied My faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was My faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam (c), who taught Balak (c) to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. So thou also hast them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans (d), which thing I hate. Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of My mouth. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth save he that receiveth it.”*

(c) Balaam and Balak = The compromise with the world, mixing pagan rituals with those of the Lord. In this period were introduced:

300 A.D. – The sign of the cross

300 A.D. – Prayers for the dead

375 A.D. – Worshipping of saints and angels

394 A.D. – The founding of the mass

431 A.D. – The adoration of Mary begins

500 A.D. – The clergy begins to dress differently from the rest of the community

526 A.D. – Extreme unction

593 A.D. – Purgatory is introduced

600 A.D. – The worship service is made in Latin

600 A.D. – Prayers addressed to Mary

(d) Nicolaitians = Those taking part to the cult had no say in the business of the church that is an exclusive of the clergy

Thyatira 606 A.D. – goes through the Tribulation: The Pagan Church

Apoc. 2:18

“And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write: `These things saith the Son of God, who hath His eyes like unto a flame of fire, and His feet are like fine brass: I know thy works, and charity and service, and faith and thy patience, and thy works, and the last to be more than the first. Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, who calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce My servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, unless they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that I am He that searcheth the souls and hearts; and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine and who have not known the depths of Satan (as they say) I will put upon you no other burden. But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come. And he that overcometh and keepeth My works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations, and "he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers"-- even as I have received from My Father. And I will give him the morning star. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches!”

It is the pagan church, full of works but without spiritual power, that through its attitude induces people to despise God and the faith in Christ as it makes people think the Christian faith is that represented and taught by the church. This is the church of the dark age.

- 607 A.D. – Boniface III: the first Pope
- 709 A.D. – Kiss the Pope's foot
- 786 A.D. – Worship images and relics
- 850 A.D. – Use of holy water
- 995 A.D. – Canonization of dead saints (believers are saints)
- 998 A.D. – Fasting on Fridays and during Lent
- 1079 A.D. – Celibacy for priests
- 1090 A.D. – Praying the rosary
- 1184 A.D. – The inquisition
- 1190 A.D. – The selling of indulgences
- 1215 A.D. – Transubstantiation (the host is changed in the body of Christ, the wine in the blood of Christ though they maintain their physical characteristics)
- 1220 A.D. – Worshipping of the host
- 1229 A.D. – The Bible is forbidden to laics (non priests)
- 1414 A.D. – The chalice is forbidden to those taking part to the communion
- 1439 A.D. – The doctrine of the 7 sacraments is established
- 1439 A.D. – The doctrine of the purgatory is established
- 1508 A.D. – Hail Mary is approved
- 1534 A.D. – The Jesuit order is founded
- 1545 A.D. – The tradition of the church is put at the same level as that of the Bible
- 1546 A.D. – The apocryphal books are introduced in the Bible
- 1854 A.D. – Immaculate conception of Mary
- 1864 A.D. – The *Syllabus* of mistakes (Pius IX), list of mistakes opposing the catholic doctrine
- 1870 A.D. – The Pope is declared infallible
- 1930 A.D. – State schools are condemned
- 1950 A.D. – The Assumption of the Virgin Mary in the sky
- 1965 A.D. – Mary is proclaimed as mother of the Church

Sardis 1520 A.D. – goes through the Tribulation The Dead Church

Apoc. 3:1

“And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write: `These things saith He that hath the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars: I know thy works, and that thou hast a name that thou livest, but thou art dead. Be watchful and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die, for I have not found thy works perfect before God. Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard; and hold fast and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee. Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, who have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with Me in white, for they are worthy. He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name from the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father and before His angels. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches!”

It is the dead church. It will not notice the return of Christ, will teach nothing on the return on Christ; it is represented also by foolish women who will be left without oil in their lamps in the Gospel. Known as the Church of Reformation

Philadelphia 1750 A.D. – To the Rapture of the Church The Faithful Church

Apoc. 3:7

“And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: `These things saith He that is holy, He that is true, He that hath the key of David, He that openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth: I know thy works. Behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it. For thou hast a little strength, and hast kept My Word, and hast not denied My name. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but do lie--behold, I will make them to come and worship at thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. Because thou hast kept the word of My patience, I will also keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world to try them that dwell upon the earth. Behold, I come quickly; hold fast that which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go out no more; and I will write upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, which is New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from My God, and I will write upon him My new name. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches!”

It is the church of the great missionary re-awakening that found an open door to evangelisation and will last until the taking of the Church for getting ahead with the Gospel in a simple and effective manner.

Laodicea 1900 A.D. – Tribulation The Tepid Church

Apoc. 3:14

“And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write: `These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God: I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot; I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of My mouth.

Because thou sayest, "I am rich and increased with goods and have need of nothing," and knowest not that thou art wretched and miserable, and poor and blind and naked, I counsel thee to buy from Me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich, and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed and that the shame of thy nakedness may not appear, and anoint thine eyes with eye salve, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear My voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me. To him that overcometh, will I grant to sit with Me on My throne, even as I also overcame and am set down with My Father on His throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches!”

It is the tepid Church, linked to appearance, that loves forms of mercy but denies its power. It thinks to be the guardian of salvation and truth, to have a great power and need nothing but it is empty and sad and will go through Tribulation because it does not have the Spirit of God. But Jesus is always ready to invite mankind to salvation. However, the handle to the door of salvation is inside us and we must open the door.

Heresies are definitely of two kinds:

1. False concept of Jesus as God
2. Mixing faith with works to obtain salvation

Phases before the Taking of the Church:

In order to find these phases one has to go through the Gospels and the Epistles. However, it is clear that certain signs will come before the taking of the church, namely: “Many will come in the name of Christ (sects and false doctrines will flourish) – People will talk about wars and there will be rumours of war – Nations and reigns will rise against one another (ethnic clashes) – There will be famines and earthquakes in several places – People will be selfish, money lovers, vainglorious, haughty, blasphemers, will rebel to their parents, will be unreligious, insensitive, disloyal, calumniators, intemperate, merciless, with no love for the good, traitors, inconsiderate, proud, lovers of pleasure not of God, will seem merciful but they will have denied the power of mercy (there will be charity events for the weak only to favour personal prestige and interests without any form of evangelisation and glory to Jesus Christ) – People will no longer tolerate sane doctrine but for the will of hearing they will look for many masters depending on their desires. “It is therefore clear that the characteristics of this period are hardness of heart in mankind towards the salvation of Christ and no will for listening to the message of the Gospel. A decrease in faith as described in the message to the church of Laodicea that represents the official church of today (Revelation Chapter 3). All this will make the Holy Ghost grant specific characteristics to believers so that they can leave a clear and strong evidence. In this way, after the taking of the church when, willing or not, all attention of mankind will be towards Jesus Christ, there will be the mass conversion described in Revelation 7:9 (an immense crowd that no-one could count) as well as the rise to power of the Antichrist.

The Taking of the Church:

It is the most spectacular and formidable event mankind will ever experience. An enormous amount of people will be featured as never before in the history of mankind. Those who died in Christ (only those who died from Lent onwards) will rapidly resurrect; believers who accepted Christ as personal Saviour during their life will suddenly leave this world and any form of material goods; their evidence will be the only thing left of them so that who will remain will understand and call themselves for the salvation of Christ. It has been supposed that also all children will disappear as well as all new-born babies and the foetuses inside the bellies of mothers because in the same manner God saved Lot from the Judgment of Sodom, He will save the innocent from the terrible period of tribulation that is due.

Text for those who will remain in this world after the taking of the Church

This part is dedicated those reading in case this book survived the taking of the Church: *“For this we say unto you by the Word of the Lord: that we who are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not precede those who are asleep. For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we **who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet Lord in the air.** And so shall we ever be with the Lord.”* (I Th. 4:15-17). *“Be ye also patient; make firm your hearts, for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.”* (Jam. 5:8).

So, now another consistent part of the prophecies of the Bible has occurred. Now you are in a world without church or real Christians; there are no children and the innocent have been taken away, pregnant women no longer have their babies inside them. Now the darkest period of mankind will begin. God will make everyone know what it means to live in a world guided and administered completely without God, against God. A great lie will spread: *“Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies among themselves. They changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.”* (Rom. 1:24-25) *“even him, whose coming is according to*

the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all the deceit of unrighteousness in those who perish, because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie, that they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.” (II Tess. 2:9-12). They will have to explain, bringing the situation to their advantage, how millions of people have disappeared. A cunning man will take control of the situation; he will not be someone with the background of statesman but he will be recognised because his political success will reach its peak with the signing of a peace treaty with Israel that will guarantee peace and safety. Once the agreement is signed, a seven year period will begin in which it will be difficult to survive especially for Christians and Jews; only a little number of them will survive and in this period many will convert to Christ, first of all 144,000 Jews but also many non-Jews: *“After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations and kindreds and people and tongues, stood before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed in white robes and with palms in their hands. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, “Salvation to our God who sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb!”* (Rev. 7:9-10). But in this period believers, opposite to what used to happen to Christians during the period of the Church, will be overcome: *“Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast (Rome), which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron and his nails of brass, which devoured, broke in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; and of the ten horns that were in his head (The 10 governments that will support the Antichrist), and of the other which came up (The Antichrist) and before whom three fell (The Antichrist eliminates 3 governments), even of the horn that had eyes and a mouth that spoke very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows. I beheld, and the **same horn made war with the saints and prevailed against them** ”* (Dan 7:19-21). *“And they worshiped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshiped the beast, saying, “Who is like unto the beast? (The Antichrist) Who is able to make war with him?” And there was given unto him a mouth, speaking great things and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months (3 and a half years, the second part of the seven-year tribulation). And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God to blaspheme His name, and His tabernacle, and them that dwell in Heaven. **And it was given unto him to make war with the saints and to overcome them;** and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb, slain from the foundation of the world. ”* (Rev. 13:4-8). The way of living of mankind will degenerate more and more and regardless of the judgements and the tragic situation, mankind will continue going against God: *“And the rest of the men, who were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold and silver, and brass and stone and of wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk; neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.”* (Apoc. 9:20-21). If you become a Christian in this period (if you are still here now it means you were not a Christian or else you would have been taken up in the sky) remember that at a certain point you will not be allowed to buy or sell: *“And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand or in their foreheads, that no man might buy or sell save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom: Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred threescore and six.”* (Rev. 13:16-18). Starting from now try to become self-sufficient with supplies of water and long lasting food; learn self-defence, find contacts with other Christians but always act “simple as a dove and careful as a snake” as your enemies will be in your own house: *“Think not that I am come to send peace on earth. I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to `set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And `a man's foes shall be they of his own household.”* (Mat. 10:34-36). Beware of benefactors; the important thing is to spread the knowledge of the salvation in Christ and nothing else. Acquire the knowledge of the Plan of God; this does not

change circumstances and one apparently does not wish to know about the future for fear but knowing the future allows you to act consequently avoiding useless sufferings. Here below you can find a chronological scheme of events that will occur from the moment the agreement is signed. Consequently organise yourself and anticipate the evilness that will fall over the entire world.

The agreement between the Antichrist and Israel

It will be seven years long and will mark the beginning of the period of Tribulation that will last seven years and will be subdivided in two phases, each three and a half years long. It is also the 70th week of the prophecy of Daniel the prophet, Chapter 9, verses 20-27.

Rev. 5:2

“And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, “Who is worthy to open the book and to loose the seals thereof? ”

Jeremiah 32:9

“And I bought the field from Hanameel my uncle's son, that was in Anathoth, and weighed out to him the money, even seventeen shekels of silver.”

The book with the seals is the certificate of property of Christ on earth. Christ bought His rights with blood; He paid with His death the right of redemption for those who would believe in Him calling Him as their Saviour. In the book of Revelation Jesus is described for what He is: “The Highest God, The Lord of the lords who has returned to take back what belongs to Him.

The first seven judgements, the opening of the seven seals

21 M O N T H S	<p>The roll with the seven seals represents the certificate of property of the earth by Jesus Christ. He is the owner of the universe. The opening of the seals means that Christ takes back what belongs to Him and to do so, He shakes mankind of its false securities, its carelessness towards the real values of life and its indifference towards the relationship with God. God makes His judgements on the earth because mankind is now useless for its way of thinking and acting and God's patience is over. This is the last chance for mankind</p>	7 S E A L S	<p>The White Horse: who rides it comes to win. It is the Antichrist installing his dominion. The world government of the Antichrist will come into power during this first phase of apparent peace.</p>
			<p>The Red Horse: symbol of war. A war explodes all over the earth. Probably the dominion of the Antichrist will create some discontent in some nations that will start a global war.</p>
			<p>The Black Horse: symbol of hunger and famine especially for the poor as consequence of the war. Inflation and scarce food; all plans made for welfare will go up in smoke.</p>
			<p>The Pale Horse: at the end of the first 21 months of Tribulation, a quarter of the world's population will have died. The fact it is followed by Hades (the stay of the dead) means they are not believers.</p>
	<p>144,000 Jews will convert to Christ and will be the evangelisers on earth with a strength comparable to that of Paul the Apostle.</p>		<p>At the beginning of Tribulation many will convert all over the world. After this initial conversion phase believers will undergo a great persecution and there will be many martyrs among the witnesses of Christ.</p>
	<p>The two witnesses will make prophecies in Israel for 1260 days; then they will be killed but after three days they will come back to life and be taken from the sky before the entire world.</p>		<p>THE RAGE OF THE LAMB: there will be a great earthquake that will change all the geography of the planet; the sun will become red; there will be catastrophes with rocks falling from the sky, maybe eruptions or meteors. It's the reaction of the LAMB to the great persecution of its witnesses.</p>
			<p>It is the introduction to the next judgements of the seven trumpets that will be so amazing that the sky will remain absolutely quiet for half an hour.</p>

The following 7 judgements, the sound of the 7 Trumpets

<p>21 M O N T H S</p>	<p>Destruction of the spiritual Babylon (Revelation 17), the cauldron of religions that teach everything but Christ's personal salvation. They teach to pray, make smoke, good deeds, pilgrimages, processions, flagellations, sacrifices, fasting, forbid matrimony (I Tim. 4:3) and teach rituals but they do not teach that Jesus Christ is the Living God and salvation is only in His name (see Acts 4:12). The destruction will be made by 10 kings inspired by the False Prophet who will guide mankind to adore the Antichrist.</p> <hr/> <p>666 is the mark of the name of the Antichrist without which it will be impossible to sell or buy. Economic control of this dictator will be total and complete but who will accept it will suffer a lot and be judged in this world. He will never be able to save himself. Maybe taking 666 corresponds to blaspheme the Holy Ghost (Matthew 12:31)</p>	<p>7 T R U M P E T S</p>	<p>Hailstones, fire and blood will fall over the earth. One third of the earth will burn as well as one third of trees and grass.</p> <hr/> <p>This judgement probably regards the Mediterranean sea in which a great big meteor will fall and will kill one third of the living creatures and sink one third of the present ships.</p> <hr/> <p>Another meteor will fall so big and so deeply that it will pollute the water beds of sources and rivers. One third of the rivers and sources will be poisoned and many people will die</p> <hr/> <p>The sun and the moon's light will decrease of one third; there could be 16 hours of darkness and 8 of light.</p> <hr/> <p>Believers will be exempted from this judgement that will concern only those who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads. People will be persecuted and tormented for 5 months with a pain similar to that caused by a scorpion. People will try to die but they won't be able to.</p> <hr/> <p>One third of the population of the earth will be killed by fire, smoke and sulphur with an army of 200 million soldiers who will leave from the Euphrates. Men will continue corrupting one another just like before and will not come to senses.</p> <hr/> <p>It is an event occurring in the sky similar to the seventh seal. It introduces the next series of judgements of the seven cups on the next Great Tribulation</p>
------------------------------------------------------	---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

The last 7 judgements, the 7 Vials

<p>Three and a half years have passed – The Antichrist breaks the agreement with Israel, abomination of desolation placed in a holy site (the temple of Jerusalem will have been rebuilt), beginning of the Great Tribulation lasting three and a half years, i.e. 42 months or 1260 days</p>		
<p>21 M O N T H S</p> <p>1260 days</p>	<p>The Beast (The Antichrist) will die and resurrect. At the same time Satan will be thrown on the earth and will incarnate in the Antichrist.</p>	<p>7 V I A L S</p>
	<p>144,000 in the sky redeemed by the nations – not to be confused with the 144,000 converted of Israel.</p>	
	<p>The fall of the city of Babylon that will have been rebuilt in the meantime, symbol of trade, economic world, corruption or moral deviation in the world due to the desire of richness.</p>	
	<p>The Battle of Armageddon. All the armies of the world will meet in the plain of Megiddo in Israel to fight against the Saints – i.e. those converted during tribulation and still alive. In the meantime, the nation of Israel will have converted to Christ. Jesus Himself will appear in glory together with all believers of all time. He will defeat the armies and kill the enemies and the birds will eat their flesh. He will throw the Beast and the False Prophet in the pond of fire whilst Satan will be tied up for 1000 years.</p>	
	<p>A malignant ulcer will hit all men who had asked for or accepted the mark of the Beast, 666.</p>	
	<p>All the sea will become like blood similar to that of a dead person and every person in the sea will die.</p>	
	<p>All rivers and sources will become blood.</p>	
	<p>The power of the sun will burn out men.</p>	
	<p>Darkness will fall over the throne of the Beast and the Reign of the Antichrist.</p>	
	<p>The waters of the Euphrates will dry to open the way to the armies coming from the East, foul spirits capable of doing miracles; they will corrupt many and gather many kings of the earth for the great battle of Armageddon.</p>	
	<p>There will be a great earthquake, so strong as never felt before on earth. Babylon (that in the meantime will have been rebuilt and probably has been made the capital of the reign of the Antichrist) will be destroyed and all the great cities of the world will be destroyed.</p>	

The wedding of the Lamb:

Up in the sky they are celebrating as the Lord, our God, the Almighty has established His reign. The bride of the Lamb – Jesus Christ – is the Church that stores the evidence of Jesus, i.e. the spirit of the prophecy “And I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said unto me, *“I am thy fellow servant and one of thy brethren, who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.”* (Revelation 19:10).

Us believers are the prophets of Christ but His revelation is not made through spectacular and unique visions or revelations. Actually, we prophesy what is written in the Bible; the Holy Ghost teaches us things on God through a constant and disciplined reading and meditation of His word. The relationship with God develops in a constant brotherly communion, prayer, reflection and evangelisation; this is why Jesus warns the Church on those represented by us in Revelation through the letter to the Church of Laodicea (Revelation 3:14). Because there is no more zeal for their belongings. Society makes also believers neglect the study and reading of the Bible, meditation, brotherly communion and evangelisation. If born again believers become colder, only take notice to their needs and concentrate on emotional issues, there are fewer witnesses for non-believers and the Enemy has more space and he makes mankind take care of everything but of a personal relationship with the Living God, i.e. Jesus Christ. This is why the world today is in a race for making itself useless to the eyes of God who will carry out His judgements for shaking the world up. But the Lord is strong enough to take care of all His children who at the end of Tribulation, after the judgement of Babylon, will celebrate their wedding.

Christ appears in Glory:

All the armies of the earth have been gathered to make war to the Lamb and its people, Israel who has now recognised him as the Messiah who had to come in the plain of Armageddon. Jesus appears in His glory together with the believers and defeats the armies led by the Antichrist. The Antichrist and the False Prophet are thrown into the pond of fire and sulphur, the rest is killed by Christ. Satan is tied up for a thousand years.

The Millennium:

It is the 1000 year reign of the earth in which Jesus will govern together with the believers; those who died in Christ during the tribulation will be resurrected; there will be a new way of setting up society according to justice and equity; many of those who have been faithful during their life of believers on earth will have a role of responsibility.

It is the period of peace on earth mentioned also by Isaiah the prophet: *“The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the adder's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain; for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. “And in that day there shall be a Root of Jesse, who shall stand for an ensign of the people; to It shall the Gentiles seek, and His rest shall be glorious.”* (Isa. 11:6-10) *“And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in My people; and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying. There shall be no more thence an infant of days, nor an old man that hath not filled his days; for the child shall die a hundred years old; but the sinner being a hundred years old shall be accursed. And they shall build houses and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards and eat the fruit of them. They shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat; for as the days of a tree are the days of My people, and Mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them. And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear. The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock; and dust shall be the*

serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain," saith the LORD."(Isa. 65:19-25). Those who survived the Tribulation will marry and have children; evangelisation is the prerogative of Israel.

At the end of the 1000 years Satan will be freed and will seduce nations (Gog and Magog) once more but Christ will destroy these with a fire falling from the sky. This demonstrates that the evil nature of mankind is independent from the action of Satan.

The Last Judgement:

At the end of the millennium, all mankind that died without calling the name of the Lord - whose name is not written in the book of life of the Lamb - while alive will be resurrected in order to face the judgement and eternal condemnation. If one is not part of the resurrection of Christ, he will be part of this multitude of people. This will be the place where the truth will be learnt too late. The destiny of these people will be eternal condemnation, torment night and day in the pond of fire with no way out, no further prospective of salvation. Also you reading today are in front of a choice: the opportunity of calling the salvation of Christ or refusing it and finding yourself on judgement day praying down on your knees and recognising the perfection of the Plan of God, His Justice and Equity and having to face eternal condemnation. Only those who believed in Christ will be saved; no-one will be saved through their works.

And I saw an angel come down from Heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after that he must be loosed a little season. And I saw thrones and they that sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them. And I saw the souls of them that had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the Word of God, and who had not worshiped the beast, nor his image, nor had received his mark upon their foreheads or on their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years. And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations to the four quarters of the earth--Gog and Magog--to gather them together for battle, the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went out over the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil who had deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are; and they shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. And I saw a great white throne and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.”

“And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the Holy Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from God, having the glory of God. And her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal. It had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels; and names were written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: on the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates. And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.” (Rev 21:10-14

The new skies and earth, the new Jerusalem:

A new sky and a new earth. God will live with mankind, will dry every tear; there will be no more pain or sorrow. And the new Jerusalem, the holy city will come from the sky. There will be no need for sun or moon because the glory of God will make it bright and Christ will be its light. Us

believers whose name is written in the book of life of the Lamb, will see the face of God and bring His name written on our foreheads. There will be no more night.

The last message:

The words of the prophecy of Revelation are true and faithful. The Lord Himself sent His angel to show what will happen. Jesus reminds us the message is for the churches, i.e. to believers, for us to wait faithfully for His return and not get tired of announcing His salvation. Here we're not talking about Catholics, Protestants or Orthodoxies, here we are talking about believers, those who believed in the salvation of Jesus Christ on the cross, He who is alpha and omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end "*I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last.*" (Revelation 22:13)

JESUS HIMSELF SAYS:

(Apoc. 22-7)

"Behold, I come quickly." Blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book.

THE SOUNDTRACK

Zaderk swings on his rocking chair glaring at the sea, his eyes on the horizon and in the background a CD with a compilation of his favourite songs starting from his early days up to now. Music links Zaderk's generation like no other one to memories, odours, feelings and images from the past. It's the generation of the Walkman, the possibility to listen to music in any place at any time. This possibility has created a "soundtrack" of the events and life experience for those who now are under fifty; the children of the economic and demographic boom of the late fifties, early sixties, those who had no fear, shame or prejudice to walk around with the famous Sony cassette player and headphones.

The songs in the background keep on playing; short tracks, each of them representing a place, situation, one or more people, an atmosphere, a feeling either of joy or fear.

The notes of **"Penny Lane" by the Beatles** recall the rainy winter days of the 60s in which Zaderk used to go to school with double shifts - one month in the morning, one in the afternoon - record players made 7 inch records fall on the turntable and their arms moved mechanically at the beginning of the record. The records belonged to his ten-year older brother who reluctantly lent his Hi-Fi: "don't touch the tracks with your fingers" he used to say. You had to put the record back in its paper folder, some had a hole in the middle so that you could read the title. **"White rabbit" by Jefferson Airplane**, **"Lodi"**, **"Green River" by CCR**; Zaderk still remembers the black and white TV images of the Vietnam war, talks about "parallels", demilitarised zone, Vietcong, all terms with no meaning just a feeling of uncertainty and worry for the "big ones", i.e. the fear of war, those the same age of his brother who used to grow their hair as women, danced naked in mud while others with stoned faces wore shirts and trousers full of flowers and big medallions around their necks and were always against America. His mother used to tell him: "Eat everything; children of your age in Vietnam have nothing to eat" - maybe she wanted him to eat also for them. **"Here comes the sun" and "Octopus's garden" of the Beatles**. Time went by slowly, the long holidays at Baia Domizia, the transparent sea. Zaderk used to play on the beach; there was no pollution, no danger of infected syringes, no debates about air or sea pollution, children played with their bicycles and in the evening at the camping site people gathered in front of the TV to support Italy at "It's a knock-out". Fear struck parents when the news on TV said that Ermanno Levorini, a boy from Viareggio, had been kidnapped. Warnings were given constantly, over and over.

“Se Telefonando” by Mina makes Zaderk think about the Panini stickers of footballers album; quiet Sundays in “Montesacro Alto” (Area of Rome), when in the silent morning streets with little traffic you could hear “Gran Varietà” followed by “Orazio Pennacchioni” who used to sing:” sò contento, sò tifoso della Roma e me ne vanto” (I’m happy, I’m a Roma supporter and proud of it). The Corrida of Corrado (Radio programme), thoughts gathering and clashing in the head without a chronological order or time sequence.

Zaderk has eternal life and this fills his heart with joy. He has no existential anxieties, no fear of death, awareness is well established in himself. But this does not stop the tears falling from his deep and dark eyes. Being able to see the world through His eyes is a gift of God but then there is the sadness caused by the spiritual condition in which the world in rises up. Everybody lives, works and acts according to material parameters; their spiritual side has been abandoned, pulled down, devastated. Zaderk realises his powerlessness: he’s only a little man; he does not know how to make people understand the Plan of God though this is the reason of his life. He loves the people around him very much, he would like to see all of them safe; he prays for them on the train, in the car, at work, when he walks around with his dogs, in bed at night when he cannot get to sleep, trying to find a system to pull down the wall of indifference towards eternal death. In a world of people with no backbone, in which verbal and physical violence is a symptom of real weakness, in which many people prefer appearance to reality, Zaderk is not afraid of being judged by his weeping for the distress of death in which his neighbour lies.

Deep inside he is steady, his feelings are solid as a rock, his thoughts are like a swollen river. But this feeling similar to a volcanic eruption, a consequence of the knowledge of the Plan of God, is suffocated by the frustration of a society that refuses the Gospel in which nature, creation, animals, the human mind, the Bible, logic, music, life, death all cry out the existence of God. Mankind is blind; it cannot think; it is insensitive to any message inducing repentance and salvation through Christ. This way of seeing life is not easy to agree with. Also those who call themselves Christians are often superficial or ignorant on the return of Jesus; they seem indifferent to the reality that Christ is alive and active in the world today. All this even if the Jewish, Muslim and, obviously, Christian religion state the Messiah should be back (for the Jews it would be the first time as they do not consider Christ as the Messiah but only as a prophet). This condition will get worse up to reaching a point of saturation. A personal consideration of Zaderk: by following the logic of Jesus it is possible to deduct that the taking of the Church will happen the day in which the Christian evidence will have no more repentance effect in any non-believer in all parts of the world.

The western model is like an enormous dark disco full of psychedelic lights following fast and increasing rhythms covering voices, sounds and lights. People are covered by strong, contradicting and resounding messages and hide in themselves, create fake securities through horoscopes, habits, manias, paranoia, wizards and superstition – also religious superstition – closing the door to the truth. **“Sono come tu mi vuoi” by Mina:** on Sundays, Zaderk and all his family used to go to the beach in Castel Fusano or Ostia with their black Giulietta and a wicker basket that was so big Zaderk himself could fit in it. On the sides, the buttonholes of the top would fit in wicker rings, then another wooden stick to close the basket and two handles, one on each side, to carry it around. Inside there was everything, wrapped up in great big cloths, then there was the table cloth, real plates and glasses, stainless steel cutlery. The folding table was made of wood with parallel bars and a hole in the middle to insert the umbrella. At lunch we all laid the table on the little terrace next to the cabin, one family next to the other, a great number of loud children filled the place stuffed with the smell of pasta sauces and meat.

“Tutta mia è la città” by Equipe 84: Zaderk is little. He’s on holiday in a campsite in Riva dei Tarquini. Next year he will begin secondary school. His parents have made friends with a family from Milan with two children; he’s a businessman working with rubber and they’ve invited Zaderk to spend some days with them in their house on the Garda Lake, then his parents will come to take him back. First they stop in Milan: the house is enormous, a little villa inside the city. The son is the same age of Zaderk and has so many toys that would make Hamleys in London be envious; he’s also got a wonderful Formula one car with pedals and inflatable wheels. Zaderk has never felt this kind of hatred before but fortunately they only stay there for a night. The day after they reach the villa on the lake; they’ve also got a wonderful powerboat. The only negative thing is that all the compliments Zaderk receives from the businessman’s wife correspond to the same amount of bad things he’s got to take from their child. Any chance will do to make him feel poor with words like: “my mother felt sorry for you that’s why she wanted you here with us”. Problems began when Zaderk after two days of silence, very simply said all the things he had been told to the parents of his now former friend. The poor child was smacked hard and punished; he probably never made the same mistake again. But in those days there was another spectacular, exceptional and wonderful event for all mankind: man had landed on the moon. All Italy stopped until late at night, every TV – all black and white – was on and all family members were sitting gazing at the great big eyes hidden behind the glasses of Tito Stagno – an Italian journalist – listening to the description of an event marking an impossible goal for mankind. But in the mind of a child also this kind of event can seem normal. In the unfamiliar field of a young mind it is possible to add any kind of information; if this mind grows crammed by messages that, willing or not, keep God away, it can create any kind of belief, even the fact of considering walking around in space as “normal”.

Many resources are invested in space research. This is definitely a fascinating aspect of science but useless and unnecessary in the view of lack of resources for education, famine, conflicts in poor countries and wild exploitation of mineral resources.

The development of space missions creates the belief in mankind that there could be intelligent life somewhere else in the universe; that there could be another solar system similar to ours. At this point theories such as those of the Raelians, according to whom mankind is the consequence of human cloning made by extraterrestrials, find ground. Among people, these fantasies with no foundations have more credit than the doctrine of the taking of the Church that is based on the Bible. The TV series X-Files says there are secret archives containing reserved information on extraterrestrial activities that should not be spread. Fiction films do not want to reveal anything though the message that gets into the minds of those who see them is: “government institutions know things you should not know. There are activities linked to extraterrestrials that should never be revealed to the masses”. The only possible explanation for the great emphasis given to these things by some people is that one day all these arguments will be useful for the “great lie” (“II. Tes. 2:11).

Battisti sings “il mio canto libero”. Zaderk’s thoughts go to the early 70s, at his group of friends at the “shopping centre” where there were several shops and a lot of space to play football, with flower beds to play marbles, closed areas where you could sit and play 7 e mezzo (card game) using the comics of the time, i.e. “il monello Jet”, “l’Intrepido”, “gli albi di Topolino (Mickey mouse collection series)” and “Tex”; all of them had to be in good conditions. You exchanged stickers on the windowsills of shops: you had to make them fall from there onto the floor; if you managed to cover the previous sticker, you won. The bicycle races under the eyes of mothers chatting to each other while the elderly were playing cards; each of them brought their folding chair from home and the table was a square piece of wood over two fruit boxes.

The group of the “big ones” met in Via Capuana, in front of the “motorcycle” field where Zaderk and the friends of his age gazed in admiration the cross-county bikes: the six-gear Milani with the tail and the red tank cost “600,000 Lira” (about 300 Euro), the Guazzoni, the Zundapp, the Caballero. They could stay forever watching the engine and the body of the bike, listening to the noise of its engine made them feel satisfied. All the group together moved onto the grass when the bikes got into action, jumping, tyres creaking, bikes being pulled up and, of course, improvised races until those living in Via Carlo Dossi, exasperated by the noise, used to call the Traffic Wardens who, however, could do little with their Moto Guzzi 500 road bikes. This experience made Zaderk start loving motorbikes and indeed many years later he found himself running on the waterline of Fregene with his Honda 600 XLR.

Zaderk has finished secondary school. His father is dead and like always when death breaks into one’s house, peace goes. At the same time, political violence starts becoming a daily thing and every evening the group meets at 6 p.m. to watch “Happy Days” and then talk about the different episodes.

Zaderk’s brother has finished making the hi-fi system. He and his friends, Cesare and Antonio had the hobby to build amplifiers and speakers for themselves and their friends. Zaderk is the first in his building to have a hi-fi with a perfect “square wave”, 100 RMS Watts of power with two speakers each with a 30 cm woofer, graphic equaliser - a real tragedy for those downstairs who compassionately tolerated the volume of the music that used to cover their voices of the sound of the TV in the living room. One day, Mr. Franco came up and very politely said: “My dear, could you turn it down a little bit so that I can hear the news”. Zaderk’s sister was in love with a Fernando, the same name of the famous Abba song; Franca, who lived downstairs, said that when her mother did the housework she used to sing “Fernando” so much it got into her head. Different times, different mentalities. Mr. Franco regarded Zaderk as another nephew; as a matter of fact, those living in the building were not just neighbours but also colleagues at Olivetti. Mr. Franco’s son, Claudio, was ten years older than Zaderk and a tennis coach. He took good care of him; he used to train him, advise him, he had wanted him as second coach in the tennis-school of the club, he used to give him Sergio Tacchini tennis gear when he got some new ones by contract and found him “contracts” for rackets and stringings. He followed him during tournaments and played doubles with him in the team competitions. All this until one day the Red Sea took him away during a holiday. For Zaderk it was like losing a brother; for whole days and nights he kept on thinking of Claudio’s face with his big moustache, a sometimes kind, sometimes hard look on his face, in his track suit on red clay courts. Often, he dreamt of him alive to then be disappointed by reality the next morning.

“Tank” by Emerson, Lake and Palmer made all the young ones of the building meet to hear that track “full blast” – you could hear it as faraway as up to the Zio d’America Bar – and like for **“Smoke on the water and Highway Star” by Deep Purple** they all simulated like idiots the movements of the guitarist, shaking their heads and moving their right arm as if they were playing while the left arm made the chords and the teeth were hanging out like those of baboons while their heads went up and down. Zaderk’s house was practically “self-managed” at the time as his mother worked as a tourist guide and was always out for long periods. But sometimes also among friends there are few real friends: once, one of them stole the wedding ring of his father and other rings of the mother. The cowardice of some never gave the opportunity to clarify this squalid and miserable episode that ruined forever the relationship with those “friends”; time made the grudge go away but not the disappointment for having been betrayed and, more than else, for the total lack of respect of what had belonged to his father, regardless of the value.

The feeling of maladjustment towards society, rebellion to pre-established rules, clear resentment towards God for the death of his father brought Zaderk to have a rebel attitude to circumstances. He used to criticise everyone and everything all the time, loathe other people but at the same time show off, in need of the attention and consideration of others, totally dependant on the opinion of others. Looking for confirmations and appreciation became like a drug for him; he had to be number one in everything: Football, Tennis, Subbuteo, battlefields and girls as well as be crazy on his bike. His only thought was linked to what he thought others would think about him; therefore, he would wonder “is my hair long enough?”, “will the forelock make my nose seem smaller?” and when his best friend used to tell him “Hooter or silence?” where “hooter” clearly referred to his nose that during his growth had developed quicker, an adult nose on a baby face. Each choice or attitude was made for other people’s judgement just like the thought: “Will they notice me more if I don’t go to the party or if I go and stay in a corner?” His life was like an imaginary stage. That’s why among the few books he had read, he used to read over and over Pirandello. He thought the “others” depended on his attitude; sometimes he made certain movements on the tennis court thinking that those watching him would appreciate and then realised that no-one really took any notice of him in that moment and more than anyone his opponent that was too busy doing his best to give him a hard match. He could not understand that other people’s interest comes when one’s role produces something good for the community. Zaderk had a very common feeling for those of his age: he had to be the best! There were no other solutions, it was not possible to be one of the many; his mind used to compare itself with others and give him a higher mark; the reference point changed depending on circumstances and always to his advantage. His standard was wrong. Zaderk used to compare himself with the messy and confused values of the world he lived in. Although at home different values were considered important, in his group, at school and in life you had to be “something” though what was not really clear – at least that could have helped a bit. At the disco you had to be the most charming, the best dancer; in tennis, the stronger; in football, the one that scored more goals; in the group, the one that had or could have more women - an incredible anxiety. Zaderk in life made a mistake he never made in tennis ... “he didn’t keep his eye on the ball!” It is impossible in life to reach a target without first regularly and continuously establishing it before just like in tennis it is impossible to have a powerful game without continuously following the ball in addition to hitting it.

This part was bringing Zaderk to frustration. As a matter of fact the call for his military service in the Army came as a liberation, an escape from what had become an impossible reality. anxiety had been caused by realising the indifference of others that was in contrast with his need for confirmations and security. This to understand that more or less everyone - some more, some less – followed the same logic of appearance, depending of what the others thought. By discovering the sad truth that each thing people did was for a need of personal satisfaction, everyone actually tried to fill the emptiness of their lack of God through human attitudes that could bring some emotional satisfaction within a useless race. You cannot replace God with something different; only when you have found Him, the race is really over and every doubt vanishes.

“Crocodile Rock” by Elton John brings back to 1973, the group of Via Dino, the never-ending football matches on the fields of Via Bufalotta, the afternoons spent in Corrado’s house listening to music, the first “crushes” and the first loves but also the first, and fortunately last, séances. The glass went fast on the paper with the coloured handwritten letters of the alphabet, the fingers of each one skimming over the glass that writes a few words in a very rapid sequence; it’s impossible that someone is pushing it as you can hardly follow it. Everyone’s fond of the “new game”; the next step will be a séance with one acting as a “medium”. The fantastic achievements had been talking with Mussolini, some also to Satan himself. But in a couple of occasions in which Zaderk was not there – the other ones gathered more often while he felt a certain fear and revulsion coming from inside – something happened; he never understood really what but all were panicking, everybody was nervous, nobody was sleeping well. So, the schemes with the letters were destroyed and the “spiritual” activity left once and for all.

Leukaemia was taking Zaderk’s father away. Zaderk was 13, his sister 10. Nobody had told them their dad was dying but things were getting bad, he was getting blood transfusions all the time; “it’s a severe anaemia” they used to say, so Zaderk looked up on the encyclopaedia under anaemia and leukaemia and discovered the symptoms of the latter corresponded to those of his father. He heard that also flu or a cold could kill him so Zaderk kept away from him and kissed him little. He passed in front of his door on the top floor lit by the afternoon sun of Rome and stopped by the door not to “infect” himself. A stupid thought, almost like a superstition that revealed a naïve will to prolong his life as if this depended on him; a feeling of impotence and misunderstanding of the truth around him as if the world were muffled and the events were inevitably going to strangle him. It was impossible his father was dying at 47, you generally died at 80 or 90. Life was cheating, it did not play by the rules. When he was 14 he had to teach him to play Bridge. He was a master, almost a myth. Maybe they said so only out of sympathy or to make him happy but when they spoke about his “bridge skills” they compared him to Belladonna in a free match; his uncles said that when they were very young he’d take care of their little expenses with his wins at Bridge.

Zaderk’s group was formed mainly by boys born around 1960. The group was formed by between 20 and 50 people depending on the moment. The area of Montesacro was made of buildings mainly of the 60s and early 70s, lived by young couples with children of the same age. When the latter started going to high school, they began to take political sides and this brought to breaking up certain friendships that up to then were solid. It was surprising for Zaderk to see how hate took over among certain members of the group; this became contagious and covered every sport or creative activity, suffocating music and habits.

Also hate and political grudges can be related to the lack of God. Mankind replaces God with a party, political or union movement and this is a deceit that produces a lot of suffering both for oneself and for others. The same goes for football, nationalistic and religious fanaticism.

Who has really known God cannot fall for this kind of trick because his life is inserted in a divine context and everything strictly related to the present time has little value. Those hiding behind the name of God abuse their neighbours, do not know God and will actually have to pay a hard price for their behaviour.

“Baby I love you” by Easy Going, “Una donna per amico” by Lucio Battisti. Thoughts go to the discos of Rome of the time - Mais and Much More – and the expression “Bonè Fratè” that only those who lived in that period and environment can understand. Also the greeting was different: like ancient Romans you held out your arm and with your hand you held the other’s forearm instead of just simply shaking hands. Groups became little “packs” inside which there was no personal identity: you were of “Talenti”, “Vigna Clara”, “Balduina” or “Parioli” (areas of Rome). Discos were the land of right-wingers. You could not talk to the girls of the other group; it was a neither said nor written law but if you did not respect it a fight would immediately start. There were no knives nor guns but if someone fell on the floor during a fight it was the end; he would definitely have to go to hospital. They met every Sunday afternoon. Zaderk’s features did not make him get noticed: he was short – around 1.50 metres until he was fifteen, then one summer he grew 22 cm – a white vespa 50, was not rich, didn’t get into fights, didn’t tell too many lies to give himself importance and was no criminal. The latter features did not make him popular with girls who said they despised hooligans but fell into their arms whenever they were given the chance. Something similar also happened at school where the environment was left-winged and in which those politically involved, those who acted as bastards with the police, those living of expedients, the rebels, “caught” a lot more girls than handsome “normal” boys. In both environments values such as honesty, loyalty, communication skills were not taken into consideration and who showed them was immediately mocked about and isolated; only vandalism paid in the group. Zaderk often cut out a silly figure for himself as he basically did not want to be an activist, he did not give enough importance to political hate or grudge nor thought to be sufficiently stimulating to sacrifice what his family had taught him to acquire prestige within the group. Moreover, his life was subdivided into three parts: his right-winged group, his left-wing school friends and Tennis. If he gave importance to integrating into one group he would lose one or two fundamental aspects of his world and this was not possible. Maybe the hand of God was already over him and so he missed an armed attack against his group, missed by sheer coincidence the devastating demonstration sadly known as “the episodes of Acca Larentia”; many of his friends were arrested that afternoon. Another time, he actually took part to a demonstration of Lotta Continua passing through Tufello. It had started from his school and was the only way for getting out of the school as the organisation had stopped people from leaving the demonstration; so Zaderk walked along the people shouting “gli autoblindo non li vogliamo più! Vogliamo i carri armati o non giochiamo più! (we don’t want armoured cars anymore! Give us tanks or we won’t play anymore!)” or “Gastronomia operaia, organizzazione, forchetta, coltello, magnamose er padrone! (Workers gastronomy, organisation, fork, knife, let’s eat the boss!) standing on the side of the crowd. Next to him there was the police; the local Superintendent Vinci used to play tennis in the same club as him, so he got behind Zaderk, who had long hair almost down to his shoulders, grabbed his hair and said with a Sicilian accent: “What the hell are you doing here, young man? Go and play tennis, it’s better!” Zaderk rose to the occasion, had a laugh with the Superintendent and really went to the club. As on many other occasions, sport saved him from many problems as the demonstration degenerated little after and many got hurt in the clashes against the police.

The ground ball wars between the Itis Pacinotti and the Liceo Archimede schools were daily routine; balloons filled with water were thrown in the yard under the two opposite buildings. The peak was reached when from Zaderk’s class on the fourth floor someone threw a black-bin-bag full of water on the car of the Assistant Headmaster.

Often, avoiding the inspection of Placido the guardian, the class used to run out as soon as the door opened for a professor to leave; one of the class ran downstairs, kept the door open and all others came to go to Archimede where the atmosphere was “university-like”, i.e. you could go in and out when you wanted. One day, the poor professor of Italian - nicknamed “Olive oil” as she was identical to Popeye’s girlfriend – came into the classroom and found it empty. They were all out on the balcony with their chairs, jumping and moving simultaneously; Zaderk was in front and simulated a rotating movement from right to left to open the doors of the bus.... They were all on

the 391, the bus that took them to school. Writing reports on their class register was a waste of time as they themselves used to write some for the most bizarre reasons.

Once Zaderk and some of his classmates, as agreed with the class of a friend of his in Archimede, came inside the classroom during a lesson, walking in line, the first playing the flute: everyone got up, followed the queue and went out, leaving the teacher astonished and on her own.

Finally, always with the same class, Zaderk turned into “Valentini”, a student that had never turned up before; the teacher asked him about his five-month long illness and each answer – improvised and invented at the moment – was pathetic and moving to tears and corresponded to great big suffocated laughs by the class that were his accomplices and organisers of the joke.

“Space Oddity” by David Bowie – “Selling England by the Pound” by Genesis. The difficulty of youth for not being at “the right level”. You had to be like others but at the same time different; there was a cult for looks: sometimes you had to be scruffy, other times the look was strictly linked to the brand and model of “the community”. In the left-winged environment you had to have the “Tolfa bag”, possibly full of graffiti, baggy jumpers, as many joints as possible and plimsolls. The right-winged environment was much more classy: Cervone shoes or Camperos boots by El Charro, Ray Ban sunglasses, especially if with mirrored lenses, Vespa 125, possibly white or else blue; the boldest used to take off the side parts leaving the engine and spare wheel uncovered, a rather bad “move” in case of torrential rain. If you were a lefty you had to have an Eskimo jacket that had to be green and bought in the Via Sannio market; for the right-winged you had to have a Loden coat, green, blue or grey; girls had to have blue pleated skirts, Cervone, Santini or Dominici shoes and blue stockings. On the one hand, the need for homologation protected you from your own insecurities; on the other hand, it was necessary because if you wanted to improve your position in a group, first of all you had to be part of it.

Political movements were unfortunately reduced in their substance and behaviours. During meetings the speeches were always the same: hate towards the opposing side, exaltation of one’s values and ideas and maybe of some characters such as Marx, Che Guevara, Fidel Castro, even O Chi Min was in vogue with the lefties (just as well there were no idiots exalting Pol Pot). On the right wing, the situation was similar: everything was based on nostalgia towards Fascism – some also referred to Nazism – and hate towards Jews and Communists. Those speaking were always the same; they said always the same things and you dare not contradict them. As there was no substance of a real political design and defined strategy, it was only logical that the so-called political actions were always rather violent and speeches were made for people to improve and boast themselves trying to obtain the approval of those listening maybe by using citations taken here and there. Youth politics had very few contacts with official politics; as a matter of fact, the most active groups carried on a logic based on themselves; no-one ever thought about carrying on according to a parliamentary view.

The trends of the time are not that much different from those of today. If you wanted to go skiing you had to go either to Cervinia or Cortina; if you went to the beach it was either Porto Santo Stefano or the Emerald Coast of Sardinia. Jokes were made in the group on those who followed literally the required clichés: they were called “Cervi (Deers)” as they all wore Cervone shoes, went to Cervinia or Porto Cervo (though they did not come from Cerveteri). There were people who could not afford to follow fashions and used to hide at their grandmother’s place for a week and then come back to the Euclide or Vanni Bar boasting about their wonderful holiday. Relationships were superficial, people could not see the basis of human values and this made boys into paranoiacs; some thought they were fat, others weren’t tall enough or did not have enough muscles. Maybe today in those environments in which nobody knows the Plan of God these particularly superficial aspects are even more amplified due to the trends the media talk about. One of the worst aspects for society is that linked to what people consider “the world of show business”. A superficial analysis makes it seem as something real but basically it does not exist. There are companies, there are theatre companies and each have their own needs: they need people for certain jobs that need to be done more than perfectly; this implies total knowledge of the job, continuous rehearsals, “keeping your eye on the ball” regardless of the result if not at the end. There is however a world around famous people formed by those who imitate their attitudes, are in the same holiday resorts, dress up as the VIPs on magazines and TV, anonymous people who live for “making others believe” they are someone through their car, boat, house, restaurants and discos. In the society of “everything and quickly”, lack of analysis skills makes people look at the results without considering what they need to do to achieve these results.

And so, in the new generations there is the false belief of the “lucky strike”, the right knowledge at the right place and everything is done to reach this. But in an organised society such as the western one, it is much easier to have an “unlucky strike”, to know the wrong person in the wrong place

especially when they say the things we want to hear. There's no victory without struggle and no salary without work. Satan is a great deceiver; he makes people fight hard for their targets and makes others believe they were achieved by chance. God allows all this so that mankind can be tested and recognise that: *"Vanity of vanities," saith the Preacher. "Vanity of vanities, all is vanity." What profit hath a man from all his labor which he doeth under the sun? One generation passeth away, and another generation cometh; but the earth abideth for ever. The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteneth to his place where he arose. The wind goeth toward the south and turneth about unto the north; it whirleth about continually, and the wind returneth again according to his circuits. All the rivers run into the sea, yet the sea is not full; unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again. All things are full of labor; man cannot utter it. The eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing. The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done, is that which shall be done; and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any thing whereof it may be said, "See, this is new"? It hath been already in olden times which were before us. There is no remembrance of former things, neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come by those that shall come after. I, the Preacher, was king over Israel in Jerusalem. And I gave my heart to seek and search out by wisdom concerning all things that are done under heaven. This sore travail hath God given to the sons of man to be exercised therewith. I have seen all the works that are done under the sun, and behold, all is vanity and vexation of spirit."* (Eccl. 1:2-14).

It won't be easy for Zaderk to propose the message of the Bible to a generation whose greatest ambition is to go on TV and become "veline" (showgirl) for women or do a "fiction" (soap opera) or present "le Iene"(t. v programme) for men.

It seems that the new generations want to live "by heart". There are no deep thoughts, just to "enjoy" yourself, run away from reality; there is bitterness towards parents when they give things too late; the youngsters are not used to exploring the phases which lead to achieving the goal. Nobody realises that to achieve a goal one must work hard. Due to this mentality people will find themselves in the middle of "Tribulation" without realising what's hitting them. The world does not realise that the 20th century was the century of wars; the 21st century will be the century of terror. History teaches us that certain things do not get better. After the first world war, after the battle in which 1.5 million soldiers died, people said: "NO MORE WAR". 25 years later Hitler had killed 6 million Jews and destroyed Europe. This is not an apocalyptic view, it's just merely recognising reality. Ten years ago a rucksack left under a McDonald's table made you think about a careless student, nowadays it makes you think about a possible terrorist attack to an American target.

“Hotel California” by the Eagles. The Marshal came up with an extensible tape measure in his hand and approaches Zaderk on the square of the Siena barracks of the 5th El Alamein Battalion. He stops just one step before him and measures immediately the height and width of the Sub-lieutenant who promptly asks: “what are you doing?”, the Marshal answers: “nothing, tomorrow you’re jumping... I’m taking your measurements... you never know ... eh, eh, eh”. He left sneering while Zaderk, who at the time was very superstitious, made a counter-spell move typical of Italian males (i.e. he scratched his genitals).

In the evening Zaderk was tired and lying on the bed barefooted and in his underpants. He thought about the next day’s jump; if everything went well as usual he would be there again the next evening or maybe that was his last day in this world.

Wake up call at 4 a.m., breakfast at the canteen, then in the square with all rifles and MG machineguns aligned on several rows, the checking of the boarding passes, everybody in the CM52 lorries. On each lorry those sitting externally towards the reclining door had real bullets in case of an attack by the Red Brigades. Also officers and NCOs present in the lorries were armed. The trip to Pisa was very long; the lorries went at 50 km per hour, in a straight line and with their headlights on; moreover, it was very cold.

Once they got to a town in Tuscany half way through some boys teased and insulted the Paratroopers who were heading for their jump. Zaderk stopped the lorry and got off together with other 5 or 6. The terrorised look in the eyes of the boys made rage change into a joking: “don’t bother us... and mind your own business. We’re not out to enjoy ourselves!”

Once they got to the airport they formed two lines on the sides of the runway waiting to board on the Hercules C130, parachutes folded, rucksack attached and on their right the FAL rifle with the bendable butt and a champagne top on the barrel to stop dirt getting into it when they landed. Who did not have one or forgot to put it was punished and had to pay the drinks.

Boarding on the great plane was made in a tidy and silent manner. Each paratrooper had to check the one before him to verify everything was in order with the tow-rope. The plane was pressurised and after taking off it made a great turn towards the area of the jump: 72 paratroopers, 12 out for each passage, the first out was always an officer, NCO or with some grades. The plane got steady, the side doors opened, Zaderk put himself in position, fingers out of the plane, his palms well opened to avoid a finger getting stuck at the moment of the jump. The air seemed solid as a wall of crystal due to the speed. One jump and they were in the emptiness towards that feeling that makes paratroopers different from other men. Zaderk satisfied in this way his need for exceptionality. Even if there was no crowd watching, even if talking about it added nothing to it, the shot of adrenaline was such that you were totally satisfied once you hit the ground.

The environment of the Battalion was not at all as people described it from outside; all boys were good chaps. Like every time there are many people, there is always somebody a bit rowdy or that brings out his frustration through seniority or grades but they were immediately brought back to senses; if anyone exaggerated with the number of dead or hospitalised relatives to have more leaves, they were forgiven the first time, then they lost also the rights they had acquired until then. The environment was serious and professional with no extremisms, no attitudes for overcoming fellow soldiers. When there was work to be done it had to be done according to the rules within precise terms e.g. rescue in case of natural calamities, security duties, inter-force manoeuvres. There was definitely strong competition among officers and paratroopers but everything was made according to the rules. For sure the Academy Lieutenant Fotieri did not appreciate the macabre joke made the night before the jump when his room was turned into a mortuary chapel with candles on the sides of the bed, a black cloth as sheet and a model of Hercules upside down on his bed. Zaderk and the “2 Georges” – his roommates – who had organised the joke were “told off” but not punished. Joking on death made you cast out its fear. After the funeral of a comrade while sharing his feelings with his roommates, Zaderk noticed that after a big accident or the death of a colleague at a jump there was a mechanism of demented euphoria that made everybody feel guilty as if they had enjoyed the

event or the fact it had not been them although there was a profound grief and sadness when a boy died after a jump.

“Roma Capoccia” by Antonello Venditti and “Cosa Sarà” by Lucio Dalla. Zaderk thinks about the words of Lucio Dalla; he’s got a lot of time to think about life’s essence in the loneliness of the roads in Islington on the way back home; nobody is waiting for him. He stops at Safeway’s to buy tomatoes, bacon, onions and Barilla pasta; he eats the same thing every night: pasta with tomato sauce. His mother taught him how to prepare the sauce on the phone; when he’s too tired he eats half a box of Corn Flakes. On Saturdays he goes to the laundrette: 7 underpants, 7 t-shirts, 5 shirts that he’ll iron himself. He wasn’t very happy when a colleague of his at work asked him: “why isn’t your shirt ironed?”. Trying to explain it was, useless. He’s got all the time to do what he wants but he’s not in the mood; he thinks about what is it that makes the world the way it is but he’s not able to find an explanation that makes sense. He thinks once more about his hometown Rome, the sun, how easy it was to go to the beach, the walks along the forums, the area where he had grown up and knew everybody; he could not walk one step without saying hello to someone. Now he was thousands of kilometres away, he appreciated the little habits of the Bonelli Bar in the morning; even the bully of the Zio d’America Bar was part of the landscape - a great big man with his shirt open from which you could see the gold chain with the crucifix - who insisted on a croissant when they were finished; the barman offered many alternatives but the guy still unsatisfied gave up and said: “OK I’ve got it. This morning is the wrong night!”. Sometimes Zaderk cracked some jokes but they were not understood as the Roman sarcasm was completely unknown and different from the English one. It was an acid sarcasm. When he went to live in Cinecittà in Piazza dei Consoli and talked on the street with some neighbours, there were some complaining for the lack of parking and the increasing number of parking spaces for disabled; particularly cynical was the comment of one who had it out for a blind man: “Ok, he can’t see but he can walk, can’t he? What does he need a space under his house for?” But it was this characteristic of Roman people that Zaderk missed: how easy it was to start a conversation, also an animated and intense one, with complete strangers and indeed when he first got back from London he liked queuing up at the Post Office listening to the people talking. Roma Capoccia brought him back the view of the city from the Pincio, cruising on his motorbike along the Lungotevere, the warm air of the May nights, the appointment for ice-cream at Giovanni’s near Piazzale delle Muse where he would always meet someone he knew. Zaderk was really proud of being a “Roman citizen”. Distance gave to his city an even greater meaning than the one it had up to his twenties. He considered the monuments and the story of the Empire as his. When he was at school he did not like history; now he had bought some books on ancient Rome. The long rainy nights at home alone were a great chance for exploring his roots, re-establishing his foundations; he didn’t need to show himself different, better than what he really was. He could take some breath. Under this point of view, London’s discretion and indifference were terrible. London absorbed everybody and everything but all had to be self-sufficient and independent.

Yet those nights spent thinking about life existence, the song of Baglioni **“Strada facendo”** made him think that one day he would find *“a hook up in the sky and hear the road become part of his heart”*. Zaderk was certain of this and once he got to know the truth, he realised that was “the hook”.

“Sledgehammer” by Peter Gabriel. The sun is high in the sky, the headband is tied up tight, dark glasses, strong wind in his face, the music in the headphones covers the noise of the engine and the wind.

The cross-country bike goes fast in the woods next to the Anatolian plain; the road goes up until 1000 metres high between trees and creeks, narrow mountain roads and a view that could be mistaken for the Alps.

Suddenly the top and a magnificent view, a green never-ending plain heading South.

Zaderk and Simon stop to look at the landscape; all is silent. They breathe in the air clean and full of oxygen, trying to store a bit of it inside them forever more.

They stand up for feeling the knowledge of existing. The silence, the peace and the view increase the sense of fulfilment and satisfaction. They know they are men, part in full of that system called universe. The sun, the earth and the sky is part of it. This is the real richness that nobody can take away without the authorisation of God.

The eyes get lost in the horizon while breathing the air of ancient civilisations; maybe this was the road where Paul the Apostle or Alexander the Great with his army passed through.

Alexander the great was one of the greatest leaders in history and died young after having conquered everything he could. Daniel the prophet describes him during the Babylonian age as a goat coming from the west who travels all over the world though his feet never touch the ground. He destroyed the Mede and Persian armies and after his death his reign was subdivided into four parts by his generals until the age of the Roman Empire that imposed the absolute power of Rome.

You feel the presence of the empire more in these places than in Italy. Those Italians in places of power do not know that each authority has been placed by God: *“Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but from God; the powers that be are ordained by God.”* (Rom. 13:1); if on the one hand, Christians are called to become subject of authorities, the latter must also know what task and responsibility they have before God. But often in Italy authorities do not take decisions if not based on personal interest; they love to proclaim, they say they want to do things with the same enthusiasm of those who have already done these things. Italy has artistic and natural resources that are 100 times more precious than the oil of Saudi Arabia but rowdiness and the eager for stopping the work of others just for show sends all resources up in smoke.

2000 years ago our ancestors on these Turkish coasts built roads, ports, aqueducts, villas and theatres. Around here, if you were a Roman citizen you were respected.

The powerful bikes, one mono-cylinder, the other 4-cylinder, break the silence of the mountains and go down towards the valley, towards the sea.

The oriental smells fill the roads of the village; with little money you can find a boarding house and eat some fish. The typical Turkish hospitality makes the stay very pleasant.

Sitting on a rock they gaze in admiration to the sun falling over the horizon towards Greece.

Simon thinks loudly on the greatness of God, the wonderful, precise Artist full of aspects that enrich those watching and able to understand. Peace is all around.

Peace.

Many talk about it, many look for it but it only takes few people – often only one - to take it away. Just like the oar in a flat sea moving all the water, you only need the anxiety and hate of one person to make a mess.

Peace on earth is a conquest; it cannot exist without giving up something, without fighting. Peace is victory over conflicts. But the Bible says that man has chosen war not peace as we can see ourselves nowadays; you only need to stick to facts, taking away the volume to those empty words that continue coming through the media from those who say they are the spokespersons of peace but do not basically have either the means nor the skills to make peace as peace can only come from inside and people who do not have Christ in their hearts have no peace, they do not know peace. Who has peace inside does not need to fight his neighbour. War comes from the ambition and

craziness of men born from God but living with the devil so that others will suffer². This will be human reality until the return of Christ into glory: (Jesus coming from David, son of Jesse) (The rest were killed with the sword of him who sat on the horse, the sword which **came forth out of his mouth**. All the birds were filled with their flesh. “*And there shall come forth a Rod out of the stem of Jesse (Jesus), and a Branch shall grow out of his roots. 2 And the Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him--the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD-- 3 and shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD; and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears. 4 But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; and He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and **with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked.** -- “*And the remnant were slain with the sword of Him that sat upon the horse, whose sword proceeded **out of His mouth**. And all the fowls were filled with their flesh.*” (Rev. 19:21) – 5 *And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His inmost being. 6 “The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. 7 And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. 8 And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the adder’s den. 9 They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain; **for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.** (1.000 years Reign)” (Isa 11:1-9). As a paradox, all those working for world peace today are wasting their efforts; the only possible direction is that mankind makes peace with God and from this peace there will be a real peace towards our neighbour. Working on the effect is not productive; the only valid thing to do is work on the causes as the heart of man is evil: “*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked; who can know it?*” (Jer. 17:9) – “*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind to do those things which are not proper, being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness, full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, malignity. They are whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, **inventors of evil things**, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affections, implacable, unmerciful.*” (Rom. 1:28-31). The grace of God cannot be bought by mankind; Christ has already paid for it; you can only accept it through faith as it free. God is the only one who can give something for free, men do it for interest, God does it for love because He is used to do so; just look at the universe, the earth, nature, life, animals, fruit, children. Everything has been given to us: “*Naked came I out of my mother’s womb, and naked shall I return thither. The LORD gave, and the LORD hath taken away; blessed be the name of the LORD*” (Job 1:21). We brought nothing in this world and we’ll take nothing away with us if not our choices as we are eternal beings as everything that God does is forever; what exists cannot stop existing and the same goes for mankind.**

The light of the morning sun is the wake up call of the boarding house. A large breakfast: tea, bread, butter and jam, biscuits, yoghurt and “beyas peynir”, a white salty cheese typical of the Aegean Sea that in Greece is called “feta”.

The table is laid on the square below the boarding house; the Oludeniz sun has burnt all the grass, the air is good. The air is already warm early in the morning. Around here you can sleep all night in the open air with no problems of humidity.

The trip is rather long and winding one: 350 Km along mountains almost 2500 metres high. The goal is Denizli, then to Pamukkale 150 km inside compared to Ephesus.

The sun burns the road under the boots; traffic is intense, many lorries; you have to be careful as motorbikes are not considered as vehicles.

The lights are always on as well as the helmet. The road is full of stones that could ricochet up on your face. Music along all the journey. We must calculate well when to go for fuel as the tank is little and petrol stations are few.

“Outlaw Man” by the Eagles. When Zaderk was little he used to dream of travelling with his motorbike and the music of the Eagles. He thought the world was his as the dream was becoming true. The unique feeling of power and freedom that came from travelling around this ancient land filled him with pride. He had everything: God in his heart, freedom of movement with a powerful bike whose roar in the aluminium exhaust pipe echoed strongly in the wide Turkish valleys. To pull up the bike he only needed to give gas with a low gear; there was no need to skid your hand on the clutch.

It's easy for those who know Turkey to fall in love with it. For an Italian, a Christian, it seems like going to your grandparent's place since in many places time has stopped at the period of Paul the Apostle.

In the inside part of the country there's little technology and people are simple and straight without too much malice.

While the motorbikes passed rapidly through the bare land, the warm air was of comfort; you never get tired of the Asia Minor landscape. After almost 6 hours they finally get to their destination; their backside is aching, their legs were stiff, the hands tingled because of the wind and the speed.

The bikes slowly stroll along the little roads of the small village and climb up towards the baths at the top of the hill.

The economy of Pamukkale is based on tourism; the calcareous water has created a unique view on the slope of the mountain.

An entire side of the mountain is as white as a glacier with a series of waterbeds heated up by the sun. The upper beds form white stalactites coloured with musk that seem great big teeth of an enormous mouth.

Behind Pamukkale there is Hierapolis, a Greek-Roman city destroyed by an earthquake. The ruins are impressive: the blocks of stone used for the Roman theatre, tombs and baths are enormous also for somebody from Rome, “the city of the Colosseum”. For Zaderk's great pride and satisfaction, the excavation is made by Italians.

The stone have Greek writings; at the time of the Romans, Greek was the international language, like English today.

Simon and Zaderk look at the evidence of a past era; a city full of people reduced to a heap of ruins in a place where people, also young people like them, used to work, fall in love, marry, have children, become old and die.

It is difficult to acquire a sense of continuity with the past if you do not know it. You have to force yourself as the mind is always heading for the future, thinks strongly of selfish needs and has no time to think about what it means to be a human being. However, each building must have some foundations and the deeper they are, the stronger they will be.

Simon cannot avoid thinking about the essence of life: time.

He begins with a reflection:” When I was young I thought I had too much of it and how much I've wasted! When I realised how precious it was I had already wasted quite a bit of it.

The value of time increases proportionally to the knowledge of how much one has available.

Someone who has been sentenced to death gives to each second the greatest importance but also we – common people – are just like those sentenced to death and we won't be able to avoid our sentence. It will be carried out with no advice when God will think better”. Zaderk answers:” But may God be praised for having made us know eternal life long before!”

Tomorrow it will be Ephesus, 150 Km from Denizli. A straight road, two lanes running across the cotton fields with the plain enhancing the minarets along the valley.

The road is desert, the heat is oppressive; on the side of the street there are some fountains to refresh the car. We pass under them on the bikes, after ten minutes they're dry again. The old people sitting down drinking tea laugh and watch astonished.

Selcuk is an important centre with a lot of traffic. All the traffic for Izmir passes from here as well the junction for Kusadai and Ephesus.

After having seen the ancient ruins of Ephesus, they carried on towards Izmir then heading for the sea resort named Cesme.

“Hey Hey Helen” by Abba. It all began in the summer of 1974, the year after the death of Zaderk’s father. Zaderk was invited by aunt Delfina to Ilica, a Turkish sea resort near Cesme in the Izmir province. Aunt Delfina is the mother of Piercarlo. At the time they hardly knew each other and did not know he would have become his best friend.

The peace and tranquillity of Piercarlo’s house was something new for Zaderk. Aunt Delfina and uncle Ernesto treated him as a son and he felt like if he were at home; he used to read the Journal Tintin, played table tennis in the big room overlooking the terrace, always new matches with his new friends, Big Frederic, Little Frederic, Edwin, Patrizio and, of course, Piercarlo. He sometimes envied his friends life but most of the time he tried to enjoy that period that had been given to him maybe for affection or friendship towards his family.

The appointment for bathing was always on the pier called “The stairway” opposite the house of Mrs. Ene. It was almost impossible to find a place to sit down on Saturday mornings; it was full of children plus all the “big ones” on 10 square metres with a two-side bench, a couple of wooden stocks for mooring boats and a wooden stairway to come in and out of the water. There must have been 25-30 people and the feeling was great. Many friends and games, a lot of will to play and stay together; nobody wanted to go away, nobody who had to leave. As in an agreed ritual they all met at the stairway and stayed there talking for hours, playing, bathing and organising the things to do in the evening.

One summer all the boys of his age were taken on the Yacht of Uncle Mario – Piercarlo’s uncle – for a two-three day trip together with aunt Ruby – Piercarlo’s grandmother. The Lotte had six bed places; the boys slept there in 14 or 15, filling up every flat place where they could lie on.

All that crowd was incredible, chaotic though at the same time well organised and with precise rules. It filled up perfectly the feeling of loneliness and sadness constantly inside Zaderk.

“Doolin-Dalton” by the Eagles. The sun was great and so were the sea and the coast of the isles in the Karaburun, Uni or Esek Adasi bays where there was a wonderful sky at night over the desert isles and headlands full of stars; the air was piercing and good. A young Italian lying on the bridge in total silence said to himself that there had to be a God though he did not know where as he had understood at his own expense that He wasn't inside a church made of bricks, a building or a mosque. But then thanks to the Bible he understood that God goes to live inside us through Christ.

The place where all the holiday houses were was called “the terrace”. Its name was because all houses along the beach had been built next to each other thus forming a long, continuous terrace. The road separating the terraces from the beach was made of white stones, no asphalt. All the boys were barefooted and looked like many fakirs walking over a carpet of nails and burning coal; they walked in slow motion, nobody had slippers; it was a sort of challenge. Moreover, slippers were not practical if you wanted to swim back home. The first house of the terrace was that of the Pierre and Marijo family, then there was aunt Ruby's, then Piercarlo's, the entrance to Guido's house – Lucio's father – the uncle who told Zaderk: “you must learn English. If you go to London for a year I'll pay everything: room, board and school but no second thoughts. It's now or never!” There was a distant family link, that's why they had the same surname. They were nicknamed “the mafia” as both sides of the family were very close and Italian even if the family mother tongue was French but for Lucio's family for whom it was English as he had an American mother.

After Guido's house there was the boarding house, then the house of Marika and Mario who also were close friends of Zaderk's parents. Then there was Martin's house and then the enormous house of a Turkish family where the “wonderful” Amberre used to live. A very beautiful girl – the myth of all the boys of the terrace. Then there was Roger's house that was new. Other houses were then built next to it up until the street next to Ene's house opposite the stairway. There was the house of Godfrey and Guineth, the parents of Carol Kathleen, Françoise, Brian and Jacqueline, and where also Patrizio used to live. Godfrey was a close friend of Zaderk's grandfather and their hunting parties for partridges or boars were granddad's favourite stories. Even when he was 90, the stories made his eyes shine like those of a child.

This house interrupted the terrace that then started again with Ene's house that had the garden in common with Herve next to Rino, an Italian businessman who had been living in Turkey for ages and was married with Aude. They also treated Zaderk as one of the family, hosting him for several summers. The last house was that of Mario, the father of Riccardo, Giovanni and Maria, and uncle of Piercarlo.

Edwin and his family did not have a house of their own in Ilica. They rented a room in the boarding house next to Piercarlo's house; his parents were very nice and always treated me well and affectionately.

Ilica bay was very big. Opposite to the terrace there was Buyuk Liman where Jacqueline and Calixt lived. They hosted Zaderk and his family many times. They knew him from the day he was born. Zaderk still remembers when there was no electricity and the light was that of oil lamps, the trip to Izmir – less than 100 km – took around three and a half hours. Every day the greengrocer passed by with his cart pulled by a donkey and the same was for the ice man. He used to go fishing with Kadri very early before dawn. They used to fish “mercans” , a kind of sea bream. They used to fish many from the shore. The sun that made the sky and sea red was amazing; the fresh air of the morning gave a feeling still present today. Zaderk's father was an expert in organising parties that were always very good: people enjoyed themselves, singing and dancing until late; their favourite song was “guanta la mera”. There was not a single cloud all summer long. The sun rose from the inside and sunset was behind the isle of Chios.

Between Buyuk Liman and the Terrace there was another group of houses where the family of Patrice and Pascal and that of Antony lived.

The beach near their houses did not attract many though it was very nice. The meeting point was the stairway at the terrace. Also friends and groups were subdivided in classes, i.e. first and second class. Zaderk had arrogantly wanted to enter into the first class taking advantage of his sometimes

impertinent attitude. Moreover, he did not speak either English nor Turkish so he could understand about half of what people said. Therefore, he used to oblige everybody by speaking in French which was more or less known by everyone.

Zaderk nostalgically looks back on those days as he knows they'll never come back again. Everything has changed. The people have changed, the perspectives, needs, goals, views, life and circumstances have changed; many of those people are dead now, the others have become old. The people and places of the past do not come back. Each moment in life kills at the same time the present moment so that it can become a moment of the past and then generate a new moment that will soon be old.

The past can't return but our minds are based on the past; each action or present wish comes from a past experience, from the way the previous days were spent.

At the time, the lack of God in Zaderk's life made everything - also the best moments - sad, lonely and strongly insecure as they had to finish. Without God the dominant element is death, not in its physical meaning but as something finished, expired, time that we cannot control. Only the acknowledgment of eternal life sealed by the presence of the Holy Ghost makes one face life with a spirit that is really alive and vigorous.

“Wonderworld” by Hurriah Heep brings back to the houses of Bornova (a residential area of Izmir); the hot afternoons walking along the little streets made of big stones with on their sides the walls of the Europeans who moved to Turkey centuries ago, e.g. Zaderk’s family who originally came from Florence. Their ancestors were the Visdomini family in Florence from 700 A.D. where they stayed until 13th September 1260 when the Ghibelline of Siena won the battle of Monteperti and the family escaped to Pisa, then Lucca and then Parma to avoid persecution as they were Guelph. Then they were given responsibility tasks in Sicily under Frederick II of Aragon for military honours. They stayed there until the mid 1600s when they moved to the isle of Chios because of the bloody struggles between the Merli and the Malvezzi. They stayed on the isle until 10th April 1822 then, due to the Turkish devastations, they moved to Smyrna.

The notes of the song shake Zaderk’s brain cells. They bring deep emotions for the memories, similar to those of a lover for his loved one. The sound of doves, the heat, the desert roads of the early afternoons, the smell of the ancient houses that resembled those of “Gone with the wind” , two-story houses with wooden floors, and white windows; a feeling of peace and tranquillity compared to Rome’s stressful anxiety, a cure-all for the entire winter. Many of those houses have been destroyed to build the university.

Zaderk has three nationalities, maybe four: the first one is Italian; being a Roman citizen is something he feels proud of. The second nationality is English as England for him has been like a nanny – strict though non-discriminatory and straight. It made him grow up; it made him widen his mind towards the real identity and dimension of the world. It taught him discipline. Once on the road to his office he overtook a long line of cars standing at the traffic light but guess who the first car belonged to? The Metropolitan Police who after a short chase and flashing their lights stopped him. The police very kindly and discreetly asked him: “where are you going?”. Zaderk replied: “to work. I work in a bank in the city”, and the policeman: “where are you from?” and Zaderk: “Rome! Italy!” and the policeman: “do you know you cannot overtake a line of cars crossing a double line? And at that speed!” to which Zaderk replied: “of course I know” with a submissive and guilty attitude. The police then replied: “So why did you do it?” Zaderk didn’t know what to say, he wanted to bury himself. The police then looked at him a little callous and said:” now you live in England therefore drive the English way if you don’t want any trouble!”. Politely and distantly he said goodbye and did not fine him.

Turkey is his secret love, the land where he has a link deep inside. Finally France as French is the language he has always heard and spoken within his family. It was the mother tongue of his grandparents, mother and older brother and indeed everybody remembers a famous phrase the brother said to his father in the lift when he first got to Italy in 1958: “Have you five piastres? Because if you no have, I have five piastres”.

Zaderk’s grandmother was a gentle woman, strong catholic, peaceful and reassuring who did not love arguments, vicious gossip or discussions. So for Zaderk French was a source of security because it was not Italian. Italian was school, his father’s death, the judiciary acts and detraints, the swear words and political hate: all of this was Italian. French was only for the Sunday lunch at his grandparent’s place, forgetting about daily problems; comics were in French and so were the visits to aunt Jeanne although all relatives switched from a language to another without any problem and also adding some Greek. Aunt Jeanne is a figure put in the family by God Himself to protect the family. The youngest of the sisters of Zaderk’s grandmother yet strong, tough, positive and generous, a figure probably shaped by the character of her husband, uncle Giovannino: a Sicilian. accurate, with a steady character, not a lover of words and very determined in his ways especially when someone needed help. Many nephews have economically and psychologically survived due to the generosity of this aunt who is still today a reference for all the family spread around Italy and abroad. Being familiar with foreign countries has one great benefit: often you can realise personally that the most powerful person of Rai or Mediaset is completely unknown in England; a politician who thinks to be a god, who makes you wait for hours, is acclaimed, served and adored at home and that you can only see during election time, is someone whose name 1000 miles away people are not

even able to pronounce well. In any case, before Christ what counts is what one has done for the progress of the Gospel, all other works will be burnt. There are no “good acts” or “good deeds” that make you earn heaven. There is only a real relationship with the living God and a behaviour as proof of His reality.

“Point Blank” by Bruce Springsteen. The first days in London: rainy days, dark early, long walks, exploring the city, looking for a school to learn English, kilometres among strangers, a mass attack of new words, not being able to immediately understand what people said. An immediate and total loss of identity, immersed in a new and unknown system without a personal rhythm of life; no daily “ritual” such as a cappuccino at the bar while reading the newspaper over the ice-cream refrigerator. Zaderk is not a believer, he does not know God, he does not have faith to warm him up. He’s searching, strolling along the centre of London and meeting people especially when he starts attending a school in Islington. He becomes friends with some students in his class: a Mexican boy, a Japanese boy and a Swiss-German girl as well as other of different nationalities. They’re obliged to speak English among themselves. Probably this is the only way to learn it fast: encircled by foreign people makes it easier; making mistakes is normal and the goal is not “to boast” but to communicate. You have to explain a concept to another person and if they do not understand it is not their fault: you start again, even ten times and try to explain yourself better each time. When you are a foreigner, you meet people quickly, you create a little group, you try to get used to the place. The meeting point was a very lively pub in Covent Garden where there were many Italians compared to other foreigners but they were bizarre, snobs and when they spoke – if they spoke – they only talked about themselves. It was interesting at first but then emptiness came up and the conversation was no longer interesting.

But for Zaderk that was a moment of incredible growth. He was 22 and suddenly without any reference points of any sort, a man facing a society who did not know him. He realised he had zero working skills when he had to fill in a form for a temporary job agency: the only electronic equipment he could use was the photocopy machine (and not that well either!); the other fields were all empty. He definitely knew many sports: he had been an officer in the army, tennis master, bartender, waiter but had no qualification, no experience that could introduce him into the working world and, moreover, his English was bad. Therefore, he was practically nothing.

Zaderk played football in a Italian Immigrant children team in London. Nobody could speak Italian well. As a matter of fact they all spoke Cockney, the London dialect of those living near the Bow Bells that is practically incomprehensible for those who are not used to it. Indeed, Zaderk understood almost nothing they used to tell him for the entire first half of the season. To ask for a “Corner” they said something like “couna ini?” which meant “Corner isn’t it?”; to say “off-side” you said “is off ref!” which stood for “is off side referee!” The team played in Hackney Marshes a sport centre in the east end of London with 110 grass football pitches, one next to the other. Kick-off was at the same time for all and it was great to see that enormous piece of land full of pitches with hundreds of people with different colour shirts. Moreover, you could also speak on the field, unlike in Italy, so you can imagine the chaos all around. Five areas dislocated among the pitches for the dressing rooms. There were teams of all Turkish, Jamaicans, West-Indians, Pakistanis, Indians, Irish, Scottish and, of course, English. Between the dressing rooms and the showers there was a piece of land that often became muddy. In winter walking over it barefooted with only a towel over your waist was a great conflict compared to the Italian habits with slippers, bathrobes, hairdryers, heated rooms and so on.

Pink Floyd: The Wall. One characteristic of Zaderk's life in London was the easiness in finding a partner. Zaderk had grown up frustrated since he had had his first sexual experience late when he was 18. He had grown up in a context in which you boasted your sexual performances though in the end many were invented and the real ones were seldom great. The model the media are bringing to society nowadays is not that different from then. The "macho", the real man, the one with many women. Fake respectability and common thinking try to deny this way of thinking but it is a fact that when a person approaches another person for dating it is to have sex with her/him and when he/she has managed to have it, it's just another number. A man acting this way is considered cool, a woman is considered a slut.

Zader used to live in a house in Islington that he shared with other two girls who were nurses in a big London hospital and I must say that English female initiatives towards Italian men are true. But also Italian girls did their part. However, all these experiences made the emptiness grow bigger: *"He hath made every thing beautiful in his time. Also He hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end."* (Eccl.3:11) and the emptiness was due to such reality. Zaderk knew he had eternal life but had no control; he realised time was slipping away from him and that there was a dimension of life he could not understand at the time, he did not have the code.

Only after knowing the teaching of Christ he has been able to understand that sexual relationship when not married is called fornication and it is a sin just like adultery. Actually the latter is even worse and more dangerous because it obviously causes the rage of the one "betrayed". Only after having found an explanation for the feeling of emptiness, after reaching the "goal", sin breaks the communion with God and this cannot be re-established if not through confession which means "come to an agreement": *"He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light. That was the true Light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not."* (John 1:8-10).

Satan wanted to devastate the world of sexuality because his target is to destroy family - that is the foundation of society - by giving a completely distorted view of sex. Man sees it as a personal, selfish satisfaction, never as giving a part of yourself to someone else. The Islamic integralist world carries out infibulation, chador, sharia and goes against human rights of women who will never be able to have an equal relationship with men. The Christian faith says there is no difference between man and woman under a spiritual point of view; of course, there is and there must be a distinction of roles. The Jewish religion is the only one that has had women "Judges" (equivalent of heads of state) hundreds of years before Christ. This means the God of the Bible has great esteem of the role of women opposite to what the so-called "intellectuals" of the world say. They have opinions although they know nothing of the Plan of God. The current society has changed every rule and habit. These human choices have consequently made homosexuals, abortion and separations increase. It is hypocritical to criticise or want to "morally" intervene on the effects; the cause is always the same: lack of knowledge of the Plan of God. How can you tell someone who doesn't know God, how he's got to behave? The problem arises when in order to justify themselves those who do follow God's teaching want to change its sense by creating theories that seem to be the solution but basically if the real God is the one of the Bible these theories lead to spiritual blindness. One of the theories that leads straight to hell is that all religions are similar to one another: Jesus is a prophet for Christians, Jews and Muslims as well as for other religious movements. If the need to convert people is erased, the root of human conflicts will end. The truth is very different: man is a creature of God with the freedom to choose whether to accept salvation in Christ as this is the only thing that can replace man's fault because it was brought to a fine end by Jesus who is God incarnated, not a prophet. Out of Christ there is no salvation: *"Neither is there salvation in any other, for **there is no other name** under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved."* (Acts 4:12), the clock of God does not stop, everything will follow its course and the indication established by the Lord as indicated in the Bible. Who does not believe has already been judged

*“He that believeth in Him is not condemned; **but He that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**”* (John 3:18).

The Wall had deeply touched Zaderk's emotions; his empty heart had perfectly identified itself in the message of the film. He had bought the video and the book and had translated it into Italian; he wanted to catch two pigeons with one stone: learn English and understand the content profoundly. Also Zaderk had lived society, family events, friendship and school as a suffocating wall built around him from which it was impossible to escape just like in the film. The wall became higher and higher and although he had looked for shelter in tennis, paratroopers, England, the many girlfriends and the religious sect, none of these had made the wall grow slower. Actually, the light of hope was reducing and vanity, the oppression of death and the end of all things were prevailing. All this up to the day in which the truth of the Bible swept away in an incredibly peacefully violent manner, the wall of uncertainty revealing the real peace, the real light in Christ.

“Pale Shelter” by Tears for Fears. In the boarding area of ELAL, the Israeli airlines, the question is always the same: it’s 1985, security officers ask Zaderk if he has received a package or object from somebody to bring it to Tel Aviv. Finally, after a two hour wait, they board. The atmosphere is tense. For those travelling to Israel there is always the thought of a terrorist attack; among the passengers you can be sure there are some secret agents of Mossad. The tour of Israel is very well organised: the hotels – basically Kibbutzes - are clean and the bungalows have air conditioning. It is amazing to see so many soldiers around; boys normally dressed sitting at the tables of restaurants with the rifle on their shoulder, its barrel towards the floor. While passing through the Arab areas where most people are Palestinians it is extraordinary to see the poverty and unsound conditions of the buildings opposite to the part of the State of Israel. Everywhere along the road there are signs of previous struggles though the present situation is more or less tranquil. However, the remains of tanks are worrying for those coming from Europe and the same goes for the warnings written in Jewish, Arabic and English that sound more or less like this: “you are approaching the occupied territories. Do not stop along the road, do not take side streets, do not travel after dark and so forth” until the end of the message that says: “You have been advised”.

Yet Israel gave the impression of being a born again State, resurrected in the desert. The Kibbutzes were impressive: perfect rectangles, green, blooming, full of trees in the desert. It seemed like physically witnessing the prophecy of Ezekiel, the prophet who lived 600 years before Christ: *‘The hand of the LORD was upon me, and carried me out in the Spirit of the LORD and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, 2 and caused me to pass by them round about; and behold, there were very many in the open valley, and lo, they were very dry. 3 And He said unto me, "Son of man, can these bones live?" And I answered, "O Lord GOD, Thou knowest." 4 Again He said unto me, "Prophecy upon these bones and say unto them, `O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. 5 Thus saith the Lord GOD unto these bones: Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live. 6 And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the LORD.'"* 7 *So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, (Either the First or the Second World War) and behold, a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. 8 And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above; but there was no breath in them. (Reforming of the State of Israel that will not see the conversion to Christ until the taking of the Church in the second part of the Tribulation) 9 Then said He unto me, "Prophecy unto the wind. Prophecy, son of man, and say to the wind, `Thus saith the Lord GOD: Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live.'"* 10 *So I prophesied as He commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army. 11 Then He said unto me, "Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel. Behold, they say, `Our bones are dried and our hope is lost. We are cut off from our parts.' (at the end of Tribulation Israel will have been decimated by the enemy armies) 12 Therefore prophecy and say unto them, `Thus saith the Lord GOD: Behold, O My people, I will open your graves and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. 13 And ye shall know that I am the LORD (they had obviously forgotten and abandoned Him) when I have opened your graves, O My people, and brought you up out of your graves, 14 and shall put My Spirit in you (conversion of Israel) and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land. Then shall ye know that I, the LORD, have spoken it and performed it, saith the LORD.'"* 15 *The word of the LORD came again unto me, saying, 16 "Moreover, thou son of man, take thee one stick and write upon it, `For Judah and for the children of Israel, his companions.' Then take another stick and write upon it, `For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim, and for all the house of Israel, his companions.' 17 And join them one to another into one stick, and they shall become one in thine hand. 18 And when the children of thy people shall speak unto thee, saying, `Wilt thou not show us what thou meanest by these?' 19 say unto them, `Thus saith the Lord GOD: Behold, I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel, his fellows, and will put them with him, even with the stick of*

Judah, and make them one stick, and they shall be one in Mine hand.' 20 And the sticks whereon thou writest shall be in thine hand before their eyes. 21 "And say unto them, 'Thus saith the Lord GOD: Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen whither they have gone, and will gather them on every side and bring them into their own land. 22 And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel, and one King shall be King to them all; (the reign of Jesus during the Millennium) and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all. 23 Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions; but I will save them out of all their dwelling places wherein they have sinned and will cleanse them. So shall they be My people, and I will be their God. 24 "And David My servant shall be King over them, and they all shall have one Shepherd. They shall also walk in My judgments, and observe My statutes, and do them. 25 And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob My servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they and their children and their children's children for ever. And My servant David shall be their Prince for ever. 26 Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them. It shall be an everlasting covenant with them. And I will place them, and multiply them, (other men will be born during the Millennium and they will also have to believe in Christ to be saved) and will set My sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. 27 My tabernacle also shall be with them. Yea, I will be their God, and they shall be My people.

28 And the heathen shall know that I, the LORD, do sanctify Israel, when My sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore." " (Ezec. 37:1-28). Israel is fundamental for knowing the Plan of God. Its past, present and future history is the code for understanding the meaning of the course of humanity. Now Zaderk is looking at the Megiddo Plain, a wonderful and green valley spreading from the hill from where he was watching until over the horizon. In this plain there will be the last battle of this time: the battle of Armageddon. A shiver runs down Zaderk's spine at the thought of Jesus returning to glory in that place together with His "saints" for liberating the besieged population.

Qumran, where the famous "Roll of the Dead Sea" were found, is another impressive site for Zaderk. It is a definite evidence of the reality and coherence of the Bible especially for what concerns the writings of Daniel and Isaiah previous to the birth of Christ. The people of Qumran were Essenians, a Jewish movement second for importance only to Pharisees. They were zealous in storing the Holy Scriptures and were destroyed by the Romans in 68 A.D. In 1952 over 600 rolls were found and in 1967 the longest Roll of the Temple was found: it contained a commentary on the Deuteronomy. A totally dry and quiet place on the edge of the Dead Sea where wind is the only noise one can hear. Qumran is the wild card played by God to make also non-believers believe after that the discovery of DNA destroyed the evolutionary theories.

The manuscripts are dated between the third century B.C. and the first century A.D. About 900 manuscripts were found including those in crockery. It is significant that there are 19 copies of the book of Isaiah, the most important Messianic Prophet.

We cannot say that God did not do His best to convince mankind of the truth and induce it to salvation. The man He created is able to reason; He has revealed him the future, He announced and made it; He established some basic principles for the history of mankind through Israel. But the layer opposing God is also strong. Zaderk once heard on the radio a statement that clearly explains the present situation of mankind:" since man has stopped believing in God, he believes anything".

“Jesus Is Alive” by Ron Kenoly and Darlene Zschech. Finally time has stopped! When someone becomes a Christian one’s time stops, one enters in an eternal dimension and the emptiness inside disappears. Zaderk meets an evangelical community where the teaching of the Bible is simple, straight and daily. He is taught to recognise the Word of God inside the Bible. He is told about some books that can improve his knowledge. Having stopped time means, from an existential point of view, that there is no more difference between a 30 year old man and an 80 year old one as both of them experience what described by the Prophet:” *but they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles, they shall run and not be weary, and they shall walk and not faint.* “(Isa 40:31). This goes both for the young and the old one and does not depend on man: “*So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God who showeth mercy.*” (Rom. 9:16). It is the positive force God puts inside real believers, those born again: “*Jesus answered and said unto him, "Verily, verily I say unto thee, unless a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God."* ”(John. 3:3).

The Christian faith is not something that can be faced in a superficial manner; it is a condition of life in which everything makes sense from the origin of creation up to the “new Jerusalem” after the Last Judgement.

For those currently living in this world we must say that the future does not hold peace at all. The theory of “a better world” is false and in contrast with the knowledge of the Plan of God. This not because the Lord does not want to grant peace but because mankind does not want to make it. Mankind gives to religion the responsibility of hate that is instead a natural element of mankind. This land was really given to mankind; free will is for real although subject to the laws regulating life. Man’s injustice will bring mankind to ruin.

An experiment demonstrated that a man inserted in a group with a certain idea on something he does not know tends to assume the same idea regardless of the truth. At the same time, if the man who ignores the topic being discussed has to answer some questions after the others, he will tend to comply to the previous answers.

The same is for mankind towards the Bible. Mankind does not generally tend to think using his own head when facing God things. Man is more and more part of the mass. He wants to stand out but to do so he must homologate himself or else he is out of the race; he does not personally investigate the Bible, he’s addicted to what he’s always heard. His beliefs have more credit in his head than the authority of the Bible even if he says he is a Christian and in case of need he prays and calls the Lord Jesus.

Through the judgements described in Revelation, as they were announced and described widely in advance, God wants once more to leave an option open for those who wish to choose the way of salvation in Christ also after the taking of the Church as those who will know the Plan of God will be able to recognise the moment, maybe also thanks to this simple book.